IMA Journal of Numerical Analysis (2023) **00**, 1–58
https://doi.org/10.1093/imanum/drad036

An augmented fully mixed formulation for the quasistatic Navier–Stokes–Biot model

Tongtong Li
Department of Mathematics, Dartmouth College, Hanover, NH 03755, USA
tongtong.li@dartmouth.edu

Sergio Caucao
Departamento de Matemática y Física Aplicadas, Universidad Católica de la Santísima Concepción, Casilla 297, Concepción, Chile, and Grupo de Investigación en Análisis Numérico y Cálculo Científico, GIANuC^2, Concepción, Chile
scaucao@ucsc.cl

and

Ivan Yotov*
Department of Mathematics, University of Pittsburgh, Pittsburgh, PA 15260, USA
*Corresponding author: yotov@math.pitt.edu

[Received on 6 September 2022; revised on 18 April 2023]

We introduce and analyze a partially augmented fully mixed formulation and a mixed finite element method for the coupled problem arising in the interaction between a free fluid and a poroelastic medium. The flows in the free fluid and poroelastic regions are governed by the Navier–Stokes and Biot equations, respectively, and the transmission conditions are given by mass conservation, balance of fluid force, conservation of momentum and the Beavers–Joseph–Saffman condition. We apply dual-mixed formulations in both domains, where the symmetry of the Navier–Stokes and poroelastic stress tensors is imposed in an ultra-weak and weak sense. In turn, since the transmission conditions are essential in the fully mixed formulation, they are imposed weakly by introducing the traces of the structure velocity and the poroelastic medium pressure on the interface as the associated Lagrange multipliers. Furthermore, since the fluid convective term requires the velocity to live in a smaller space than usual, we augment the variational formulation with suitable Galerkin-type terms. Existence and uniqueness of a solution are established for the continuous weak formulation, as well as a semidiscrete continuous-in-time formulation with nonmatching grids, together with the corresponding stability bounds and error analysis with rates of convergence. Several numerical experiments are presented to verify the theoretical results and illustrate the performance of the method for applications to arterial flow and flow through a filter.

Keywords: Navier–Stokes–Biot; poroelastic structure interaction; fully mixed formulation.

1. Introduction

The interaction between free fluid and flow in adjacent deformable poroelastic medium, referred to as fluid–poroelastic structure interaction (FPSI), is motivated by a variety of applications, such as modeling of blood flow, design of industrial filters and cleanup of groundwater flow in aquifers, to name a few. The free fluid flow is typically modeled by the Stokes or the Navier–Stokes equations, with the Navier–Stokes equations being more suitable for fast flows. The fluid flow within the poroelastic medium is modeled by the Biot system, which takes into account the effect of the deformation of the medium on the flow and vice versa. The two regions are coupled across the interface through dynamic and kinematic transmission conditions. The FPSI problem exhibits features of coupled Stokes–Darcy flows and fluid–structure interaction.

One of the first works on the analysis of the Stokes–Biot problem is Showalter (2005), where the coupled system is resolved by semigroup methods for a suitable variational formulation. Numerical studies for the coupled Navier–Stokes and Biot system are presented in Badia *et al.* (2009), where both monolithic solvers and heterogeneous domain decomposition strategies are considered. In Bukač *et al.* (2015b), a noniterative operator splitting scheme for a Navier–Stokes–Biot model with nonmixed Darcy formulation is developed. The approach is extended in Bukač (2016) to coupling between fluid, elastic structure and poroelastic material. Mixed Darcy formulations, where the continuity of flux condition is of essential type, are considered in Bukač *et al.* (2015a), using the Nitsche's interior penalty method, and in Ambartsumyan *et al.* (2018), using a Lagrange multiplier method. Well-posedness for the fully dynamic Navier–Stokes–Biot system with a nonmixed Darcy formulation is established in Cesmelioglu (2017). A nonlinear Stokes–Biot system for non-Newtonian fluids is analyzed in Ambartsumyan *et al.* (2019a) by means of a reduced parabolic-type system for the pressure and stress in the poroelastic region and classical results on nonlinear monotone operators in Sobolev space setting. A numerical scheme for the Stokes–Biot model with inf-sup stable Stokes elements for the Biot displacement–pressure pair is developed in Cesmelioglu & Chidyagwai (2020). A Stokes–Biot model with a total pressure formulation is studied in Ruiz-Baier *et al.* (2022). Well-posedness for a Stokes–Biot system with a multilayered porous medium using Rothe's method is obtained in Bociu *et al.* (2021). A Lagrange multiplier method for a fully dynamic Navier–Stokes–Biot system with a mixed Darcy formulation is developed in (Wang & Yotov, Preprint). Additional works include optimization-based decoupling method (Cesmelioglu *et al.*, 2016), a second order in time split scheme (Kunwar *et al.*, 2020), dimensionally reduced model for flow through fractures (Bukač *et al.*, 2017), coupling with transport (Ambartsumyan *et al.*, 2019b) and porohyperelastic media (Seboldt *et al.*, 2021). All of the above-mentioned works utilize displacement formulations for the elasticity equation. In a recent work (Li & Yotov, 2022), the first mathematical and numerical analysis of a stress–displacement mixed elasticity formulation for the Stokes–Biot model is presented. More recently, a fully mixed formulation of the quasistatic Stokes–Biot model based on dual mixed formulations for Darcy, elasticity and Stokes is developed in Caucao *et al.* (2022). The resulting three-field dual mixed Stokes formulation and five-field dual mixed Biot formulation lead to the development of a multipoint stress–flux mixed finite element method that can be reduced to a positive definite cell-centered pressure–velocities–traces system. This approach is extended numerically to the Navier–Stokes–Biot system in Caucao *et al.* (2020).

In this paper, we consider the quasistatic Navier–Stokes–Biot model. The model is better suitable than the Stokes–Biot model for fast flows that may occur in many applications, including blood flow, flows through industrial filters and coupling of surface and subsurface flows. The problem is much harder from mathematical point of view, due to the nonlinear convective term in the Navier–Stokes equations. Only two of the above mentioned works, Cesmelioglu (2017) and (Wang & Yotov, Preprint), deal with the analysis of the weak formulation or the numerical approximation of the Navier–Stokes–Biot model. Both consider the fully dynamic problem and utilize a velocity–pressure Navier–Stokes formulation and a displacement-based elasticity formulation. In this paper, we combine techniques developed in Camaño *et al.* (2017, 2018), Caucao *et al.* (2022) and Li & Yotov (2022) to study a fully mixed formulation of the quasistatic Navier–Stokes–Biot model, which is based on dual mixed formulations for all three components—Navier–Stokes, Darcy and elasticity. To deal with the nonlinearity, we consider a pseudostress-based formulation for the Navier–Stokes equations. Such formulations allow for a unified analysis for Newtonian and non-Newtonian flows (Camaño *et al.*, 2016; Caucao *et al.*, 2017). Here, similarly to Camaño *et al.* (2017), we introduce a nonlinear pseudostress tensor combining the fluid stress tensor with the convective term. Together with the fluid velocity, it yields a pseudostress–velocity Navier–Stokes formulation. Furthermore, in order to control the fluid variables in their natural norms, i.e., the norms associated with the differential operators in the strong form of the equations, and avoid the need for inf-sup stable finite elements, we augment the mixed formulation with some redundant Galerkin-type terms arising from the equilibrium and constitutive equations. In particular, the fluid stress is in H(div) and the fluid velocity is in H^1, resulting in smooth and accurate finite element approximations of both variables. We further note that the computational overhead due to adding the stabilization terms is minimal, since they do not involve additional variables. For the Biot system, we employ a five-field dual mixed formulation based on the model developed in Lee (2016), and studied in Caucao *et al.* (2022) and Li & Yotov (2022) for the Stokes–Biot model. In particular, we use a velocity–pressure Darcy formulation and a weakly symmetric stress–displacement–rotation elasticity formulation. While we focus on weakly symmetric elasticity, which in certain cases allows for stress and rotation elimination and a reduction to an efficient cell-centered displacement system (Ambartsumyan *et al.*, 2020a,b; Caucao *et al.*, 2022), our methodology also applies to the strongly symmetric stress–displacement elasticity formulation and the resulting four-field mixed Biot formulation (Yi, 2014). In turn, the transmission conditions consisting of mass conservation, balance of fluid force, conservation of momentum and the Beavers–Joseph–Saffman slip with friction condition are imposed weakly through the introduction of two Lagrange multipliers: the traces of the structure velocity and the Darcy pressure on the interface. The advantages of the resulting fully mixed formulation for the Navier–Stokes–Biot model include local mass conservation for the Darcy fluid, local momentum conservation for the poroelastic stress, accurate approximations for the Darcy velocity, the poroelastic stress and the fluid pseudostress with continuous normal components across element edges or faces, locking-free behavior and robustness with respect to the physical parameters. We emphasize that accurate and locally conservative stress computations are important in many applications, including flows in fractured subsurface formations and blood flow, which is one of the numerical examples we present in Section 6.

The main contributions of this paper are as follows. Since the proposed augmented fully mixed formulation is new, we first study its well-posedness. Because the model is quasistatic, it is not possible to utilize the theory of ordinary differential equations for the semidiscrete Galerkin approximation, in contrast to Cesmelioglu (2017) and (Wang & Yotov, Preprint) where the fully dynamic problem is considered. Instead, we rewrite the system as a parabolic problem for the poroelastic stress and Darcy pressure and employ the classical semigroup theory for differential equations with monotone operators (Showalter, 1997), combined with a fixed point approach for the solvability of the resolvent system. We then present a semidiscrete continuous-in-time formulation based on employing stable mixed finite element spaces for the Navier–Stokes, Darcy and elasticity equations with possibly nonmatching grids along the interface, together with suitable choices for the Lagrange multiplier finite element spaces. Well-posedness and stability analysis results are established using a similar argument to the continuous case. We then develop error analysis and establish rates of convergence for all variables. We further present a fully discrete finite element method based on the backward Euler time discretization and give a roadmap for its analysis. Finally, we present several numerical experiments to verify the theoretical rates of convergence and illustrate the behavior of the method for modeling blood flow in an arterial bifurcation as well as air flow through a filter.

The rest of the paper is organized as follows. The remainder of this section describes standard notation and functional spaces to be employed throughout the paper. In Section 2, we introduce the mathematical model, whereas in Section 3, we derive the continuous weak formulation and establish some stability properties for the associated operators. Section 4 is devoted to the well-posedness of the continuous weak formulation, where, a suitable fixed point approach is applied to establish existence, uniqueness and stability of the solution. The semidiscrete continuous-in-time approximation is introduced and analyzed in Section 5, including its well-posedness, stability and error analysis. The fully discrete scheme is presented at the end of the section. Numerical experiments are presented in Section 6, followed by conclusions in Section 7.

We end this section by introducing some definitions and fixing some notation. Let $\mathbb{M}$, $\mathbb{S}$ and $\mathbb{N}$ denote the sets of $n \times n$ matrices, $n \times n$ symmetric matrices and $n \times n$ skew-symmetric matrices, respectively. For a bounded domain $\mathcal{O} \subset \mathrm{R}^n$, $n \in \{2, 3\}$, standard notation is adopted for Lebesgue spaces $\mathrm{L}^p(\mathcal{O})$, Hilbert spaces $\mathrm{H}^k(\mathcal{O})$ and Sobolev spaces $\mathrm{W}^{k,p}(\mathcal{O})$. By $\mathbf{Z}$ and $\mathbb{Z}$, we denote the corresponding vectorial and tensorial counterparts of a generic scalar functional space Z. The $\mathrm{L}^2(\mathcal{O})$ inner product for scalar, vector or tensor valued functions is denoted by $(\cdot, \cdot)_{\mathcal{O}}$. For a section of the boundary Γ, the $\mathrm{L}^2(\Gamma)$ inner product or duality pairing is denoted by $\langle \cdot, \cdot \rangle_\Gamma$. For a Banach space V, we denote its dual space by V′. For an operator $\mathcal{A} : \mathrm{V} \to \mathrm{U}'$, its adjoint operator is denoted by $\mathcal{A}' : \mathrm{U} \to \mathrm{V}'$. For any vector fields $\mathbf{v} = (v_i)_{i=1,\ldots,n}$ and $\mathbf{w} = (w_i)_{i=1,\ldots,n}$, we set the gradient, symmetric part of the gradient, divergence and tensor product operators, as

$$\nabla \mathbf{v} := \left(\frac{\partial v_i}{\partial x_j} \right)_{i,j=1,\ldots,n}, \quad \mathbf{e}(\mathbf{v}) := \frac{1}{2}\big(\nabla \mathbf{v} + (\nabla \mathbf{v})^{\mathrm{t}}\big), \quad \mathrm{div}(\mathbf{v}) := \sum_{j=1}^{n} \frac{\partial v_j}{\partial x_j} \quad \text{and} \quad \mathbf{v} \otimes \mathbf{w} := (v_i w_j)_{i,j=1,\ldots,n}.$$

Furthermore, for any tensor field $\boldsymbol{\tau} := (\tau_{ij})_{i,j=1,\ldots,n}$ and $\boldsymbol{\zeta} := (\zeta_{ij})_{i,j=1,\ldots,n}$, we define the transpose, the trace, the tensor inner product and the deviatoric tensor, respectively, as

$$\boldsymbol{\tau}^{\mathrm{t}} := (\tau_{ji})_{i,j=1,\ldots,n}, \quad \mathrm{tr}(\boldsymbol{\tau}) := \sum_{i=1}^{n} \tau_{ii}, \quad \boldsymbol{\tau} : \boldsymbol{\zeta} := \sum_{i,j=1}^{n} \tau_{ij}\zeta_{ij} \quad \text{and} \quad \boldsymbol{\tau}^{\mathrm{d}} := \boldsymbol{\tau} - \frac{1}{n}\mathrm{tr}(\boldsymbol{\tau})\mathbf{I}, \tag{1.1}$$

where $\mathbf{I}$ is the identity matrix in $\mathrm{R}^{n\times n}$. In addition, we recall the Hilbert space

$$\mathbf{H}(\mathrm{div}; \mathcal{O}) := \Big\{ \mathbf{v} \in \mathbf{L}^2(\mathcal{O}) : \quad \mathrm{div}(\mathbf{v}) \in \mathrm{L}^2(\mathcal{O}) \Big\},$$

equipped with the norm $\|\mathbf{v}\|^2_{\mathbf{H}(\mathrm{div};\mathcal{O})} := \|\mathbf{v}\|^2_{\mathbf{L}^2(\mathcal{O})} + \|\mathrm{div}(\mathbf{v})\|^2_{\mathrm{L}^2(\mathcal{O})}$. The space of matrix valued functions whose rows belong to $\mathbf{H}(\mathrm{div}; \mathcal{O})$ is denoted by $\mathbb{H}(\mathbf{div}; \mathcal{O})$ and endowed with the norm $\|\boldsymbol{\tau}\|^2_{\mathbb{H}(\mathbf{div};\mathcal{O})} := \|\boldsymbol{\tau}\|^2_{\mathbb{L}^2(\mathcal{O})} + \|\mathbf{div}(\boldsymbol{\tau})\|^2_{\mathbf{L}^2(\mathcal{O})}$. Finally, given a separable Banach space V endowed with the norm $\|\cdot\|_{\mathrm{V}}$, we introduce the Bochner spaces $\mathrm{L}^2(0, T; \mathrm{V})$, $\mathrm{H}^s(0, T; \mathrm{V})$, with integer $s \geq 1$, $\mathrm{L}^\infty(0, T; \mathrm{V})$ and $\mathrm{W}^{1,\infty}(0, T; \mathrm{V})$, endowed with the norms

$$\|f\|^2_{\mathrm{L}^2(0,T;\mathrm{V})} := \int_0^T \|f(t)\|^2_{\mathrm{V}}\, \mathrm{d}t, \quad \|f\|^2_{\mathrm{H}^s(0,T;\mathrm{V})} := \int_0^T \sum_{i=0}^{s} \|\partial_t^i f(t)\|^2_{\mathrm{V}}\, \mathrm{d}t,$$

$$\|f\|_{\mathrm{L}^\infty(0,T;\mathrm{V})} := \operatorname*{ess\,sup}_{t\in[0,T]} \|f(t)\|_{\mathrm{V}}, \quad \|f\|_{\mathrm{W}^{1,\infty}(0,T;\mathrm{V})} := \operatorname*{ess\,sup}_{t\in[0,T]} \big\{ \|f(t)\|_{\mathrm{V}} + \|\partial_t f(t)\|_{\mathrm{V}} \big\}.$$

2. The model problem

Let $\Omega \subset \mathrm{R}^n$, $n \in \{2,3\}$ be a Lipschitz domain with polytopal boundary, which is subdivided into two nonoverlapping and possibly nonconnected regions: a fluid region Ω_f and a poroelastic region Ω_p. Let $\Gamma_{fp} = \partial\Omega_f \cap \partial\Omega_p$ denote the (nonempty) interface between these regions and let $\Gamma_f = \partial\Omega_f \setminus \Gamma_{fp}$ and $\Gamma_p = \partial\Omega_p \setminus \Gamma_{fp}$ denote the external parts of the boundary $\partial\Omega$. We denote by $\mathbf{n}_f$ and $\mathbf{n}_p$ the unit normal vectors, which point outward from $\partial\Omega_f$ and $\partial\Omega_p$, respectively, noting that $\mathbf{n}_f = -\mathbf{n}_p$ on Γ_{fp}. Let $(\mathbf{u}_\star, p_\star)$ be the velocity–pressure pair in $\Omega_\star$ with $\star \in \{f,p\}$, and let $\boldsymbol{\eta}_p$ be the displacement in Ω_p. Let $\mu > 0$ be the fluid viscosity, let ρ be the density, let $\mathbf{f}_\star$ be the body force terms, which do not depend on time, and let q_p be external source or sink term. The flow in Ω_f is governed by the Navier–Stokes equations:

$$\rho\,(\nabla\mathbf{u}_f)\,\mathbf{u}_f - \mathbf{div}(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_f) = \mathbf{f}_f, \quad \mathrm{div}(\mathbf{u}_f) = 0 \quad \text{in} \quad \Omega_f \times (0,T], \tag{2.1a}$$

$$(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_f - \rho\,(\mathbf{u}_f \otimes \mathbf{u}_f))\,\mathbf{n}_f = \mathbf{0} \quad \text{on} \quad \Gamma_f^{\mathrm{N}} \times (0,T], \quad \mathbf{u}_f = \mathbf{0} \quad \text{on} \quad \Gamma_f^{\mathrm{D}} \times (0,T], \tag{2.1b}$$

where $\boldsymbol{\sigma}_f := -p_f\,\mathbf{I} + 2\,\mu\,\mathbf{e}(\mathbf{u}_f)$ denotes the stress tensor and $\Gamma_f = \Gamma_f^{\mathrm{N}} \cup \Gamma_f^{\mathrm{D}}$. While the standard Navier–Stokes equations are presented above to describe the behavior of the fluid in Ω_f, in this work, we make use of an equivalent version of (2.1) based on the introduction of a pseudostress tensor combining the stress tensor $\boldsymbol{\sigma}_f$ with the convective term. More precisely, analogously to Camaño *et al.* (2016, 2017, 2018); Caucao *et al.* (2017); and Gatica *et al.* (2020), we introduce the nonlinear-pseudostress tensor

$$\mathbf{T}_f := \boldsymbol{\sigma}_f - \rho\,(\mathbf{u}_f \otimes \mathbf{u}_f) = -p_f\,\mathbf{I} + 2\,\mu\,\mathbf{e}(\mathbf{u}_f) - \rho\,(\mathbf{u}_f \otimes \mathbf{u}_f) \quad \text{in} \quad \Omega_f \times (0,T]. \tag{2.2}$$

In this way, applying the matrix trace to the tensor $\mathbf{T}_f$, and utilizing the incompressibility condition $\mathrm{div}(\mathbf{u}_f) = 0$ in $\Omega_f \times (0,T]$, one arrives at

$$p_f = -\frac{1}{n}\Big(\mathrm{tr}(\mathbf{T}_f) + \rho\,\mathrm{tr}(\mathbf{u}_f \otimes \mathbf{u}_f)\Big) \quad \text{in} \quad \Omega_f \times (0,T]. \tag{2.3}$$

Hence, replacing back (2.3) into (2.2), and using the definition of the deviatoric operator (1.1), we obtain $\mathbf{T}_f^{\mathrm{d}} = 2\,\mu\,\mathbf{e}(\mathbf{u}_f) - \rho\,(\mathbf{u}_f \otimes \mathbf{u}_f)^{\mathrm{d}}$. Therefore, (2.1) can be rewritten, equivalently, as the set of equations with unknowns $\mathbf{T}_f$ and $\mathbf{u}_f$, given by

$$\frac{1}{2\,\mu}\,\mathbf{T}_f^{\mathrm{d}} = \nabla\mathbf{u}_f - \boldsymbol{\gamma}_f(\mathbf{u}_f) - \frac{\rho}{2\,\mu}\,(\mathbf{u}_f \otimes \mathbf{u}_f)^{\mathrm{d}}, \quad -\mathbf{div}(\mathbf{T}_f) = \mathbf{f}_f, \quad \mathbf{T}_f = \mathbf{T}_f^{\mathrm{t}} \quad \text{in} \quad \Omega_f \times (0,T], \tag{2.4a}$$

$$\mathbf{T}_f\mathbf{n}_f = \mathbf{0} \quad \text{on} \quad \Gamma_f^{\mathrm{N}} \times (0,T], \quad \mathbf{u}_f = \mathbf{0} \quad \text{on} \quad \Gamma_f^{\mathrm{D}} \times (0,T], \tag{2.4b}$$

where $\boldsymbol{\gamma}_f(\mathbf{u}_f) := \frac{1}{2}\left(\nabla\mathbf{u}_f - (\nabla\mathbf{u}_f)^{\mathrm{t}}\right)$ is the vorticity (or the skew-symmetric part of the velocity gradient tensor $\nabla\mathbf{u}_f$). Notice that, as suggested by (2.3), p_f is eliminated from the present formulation and can be computed afterwards in terms of $\mathbf{T}_f$ and $\mathbf{u}_f$. In addition, the fluid stress $\boldsymbol{\sigma}_f$ can be recovered from (2.2). For simplicity, we assume that $|\Gamma_f^{\mathrm{N}}| > 0$, which will allow us to control $\mathbf{T}_f$ by $\mathbf{T}_f^{\mathrm{d}}$, cf. (3.26). The case $|\Gamma_f^{\mathrm{N}}| = 0$ can be handled as in Gatica *et al.* (2011, 2014, 2020) by introducing an additional variable corresponding to the mean value of $\mathrm{tr}(\mathbf{T}_f)$. We further note that it is also possible to consider the boundary condition $\boldsymbol{\sigma}_f\mathbf{n}_f = \mathbf{0}$ on Γ_f^{N}, leading to the Robin-type boundary condition $\mathbf{T}_f\mathbf{n}_f +$

$\rho\,(\mathbf{u}_f \otimes \mathbf{u}_f)\mathbf{n}_f = \mathbf{0}$ on Γ_f^{N}. In this case the space for $\mathbf{T}_f$ is unrestricted on Γ_f^{N} and the third and fourth terms in (3.6b) below become $\left\langle \mathbf{T}_f\mathbf{n}_f, \mathbf{v}_f \right\rangle_{\Gamma_{fp}\cup\Gamma_f^{\mathrm{N}}} + \rho\,\left\langle \mathbf{u}_f\cdot\mathbf{n}_f, \mathbf{u}_f\cdot\mathbf{v}_f \right\rangle_{\Gamma_{fp}\cup\Gamma_f^{\mathrm{N}}}$, which can be handled in the same way. In addition, the control of $\mathbf{T}_f$ by $\mathbf{T}_f^{\mathrm{d}}$ can be achieved similarly to the case $|\Gamma_f^{\mathrm{N}}| = 0$.

In turn, let $\boldsymbol{\sigma}_e$ and $\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p$ be the elastic and poroelastic stress tensors, respectively:

$$A(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_e) = \mathbf{e}(\boldsymbol{\eta}_p) \quad \text{and} \quad \boldsymbol{\sigma}_p := \boldsymbol{\sigma}_e - \alpha_p\, p_p\, \mathbf{I} \quad \text{in} \quad \Omega_p \times (0,T], \tag{2.5}$$

where $0 < \alpha_p \le 1$ is the Biot–Willis constant, and $A : \mathbb{S} \to \mathbb{M}$ is the symmetric and positive definite compliance tensor, satisfying, for some $0 < a_{\min} \le a_{\max} < \infty$,

$$\forall\, \boldsymbol{\tau} \in \mathrm{R}^{n\times n}, \quad a_{\min}\, \boldsymbol{\tau} : \boldsymbol{\tau} \le A(\boldsymbol{\tau}) : \boldsymbol{\tau} \le a_{\max}\, \boldsymbol{\tau} : \boldsymbol{\tau} \quad \forall\, \mathbf{x} \in \Omega_p. \tag{2.6}$$

In the isotropic case A has the form, for all symmetric tensors $\boldsymbol{\tau}$,

$$A(\boldsymbol{\tau}) := \frac{1}{2\,\mu_p}\left(\boldsymbol{\tau} - \frac{\lambda_p}{2\,\mu_p + n\,\lambda_p}\,\mathrm{tr}(\boldsymbol{\tau})\,\mathbf{I}\right), \quad \text{with} \quad A^{-1}(\boldsymbol{\tau}) = 2\,\mu_p\,\boldsymbol{\tau} + \lambda_p\,\mathrm{tr}(\boldsymbol{\tau})\,\mathbf{I}, \tag{2.7}$$

where $0 < \lambda_{\min} \le \lambda_p(\mathbf{x}) \le \lambda_{\max}$ and $0 < \mu_{\min} \le \mu_p(\mathbf{x}) \le \mu_{\max}$ are the Lamé parameters. In this case, $\boldsymbol{\sigma}_e := \lambda_p\,\mathrm{div}(\boldsymbol{\eta}_p)\,\mathbf{I} + 2\,\mu_p\,\mathbf{e}(\boldsymbol{\eta}_p)$, $a_{\min} = \frac{1}{2\mu_{\max}+n\,\lambda_{\max}}$ and $a_{\max} = \frac{1}{2\mu_{\min}}$. As in Lee (2016), we extend the definition of A on $\mathbb{M}$ such that it is a positive constant multiple of the identity map on $\mathbb{N}$. The poroelasticity region Ω_p is governed by the quasistatic Biot system (Biot, 1941):

$$-\,\mathbf{div}(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p) = \mathbf{f}_p, \quad \mu\,\mathbf{K}^{-1}\,\mathbf{u}_p + \nabla p_p = \mathbf{0} \quad \text{in} \quad \Omega_p \times (0,T], \tag{2.8a}$$

$$\frac{\partial}{\partial t}\left(s_0 p_p + \alpha_p\,\mathrm{div}(\boldsymbol{\eta}_p)\right) + \mathrm{div}(\mathbf{u}_p) = q_p \quad \text{in} \quad \Omega_p \times (0,T], \tag{2.8b}$$

$$\mathbf{u}_p\cdot\mathbf{n}_p = 0 \quad \text{on} \quad \Gamma_p^{\mathrm{N}} \times (0,T], \quad p_p = 0 \quad \text{on} \quad \Gamma_p^{\mathrm{D}} \times (0,T], \tag{2.8c}$$

$$\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p\mathbf{n}_p = \mathbf{0} \quad \text{on} \quad \tilde{\Gamma}_p^{\mathrm{N}} \times (0,T], \quad \boldsymbol{\eta}_p = \mathbf{0} \quad \text{on} \quad \tilde{\Gamma}_p^{\mathrm{D}} \times (0,T], \tag{2.8d}$$

where $\Gamma_p = \Gamma_p^{\mathrm{N}} \cup \Gamma_p^{\mathrm{D}} = \tilde{\Gamma}_p^{\mathrm{N}} \cup \tilde{\Gamma}_p^{\mathrm{D}}$, $s_0 > 0$ is a constant storage coefficient and $\mathbf{K}$ the symmetric and uniformly positive definite rock permeability tensor, satisfying, for some constants $0 < k_{\min} \le k_{\max}$,

$$\forall\, \mathbf{w} \in \mathrm{R}^n \quad k_{\min}\,\mathbf{w}\cdot\mathbf{w} \le (\mathbf{K}\mathbf{w})\cdot\mathbf{w} \le k_{\max}\,\mathbf{w}\cdot\mathbf{w} \quad \forall\, \mathbf{x} \in \Omega_p. \tag{2.9}$$

We consider a range $0 < s_{0,\min} \le s_0 \le s_{0,\max}$ for the storage coefficient. Since locking in poroelasticity may occur for small values of s_0, in the analysis, we explicitly track the dependence of the constants on $s_{0,\min}$ and note that they may depend on $s_{0,\max}$. To avoid the issue with restricting the mean value of the pressure, we assume that $|\Gamma_p^{\mathrm{D}}| > 0$. We also assume that Γ_p^{D} and $\tilde{\Gamma}_p^{\mathrm{D}}$ are not adjacent to the interface Γ_{fp}, i.e., $\exists\, s > 0$ such that $\mathrm{dist}\,(\Gamma_p^{\mathrm{D}}, \Gamma_{fp}) \ge s > 0$ and $\mathrm{dist}\,(\tilde{\Gamma}_p^{\mathrm{D}}, \Gamma_{fp}) \ge s > 0$. This assumption is used to simplify the characterization of the normal trace spaces on Γ_{fp}.

Next, we introduce the transmission conditions on the interface Γ_{fp}:

$$\mathbf{u}_f \cdot \mathbf{n}_f + \left(\frac{\partial \boldsymbol{\eta}_p}{\partial t} + \mathbf{u}_p\right) \cdot \mathbf{n}_p = 0, \quad \boldsymbol{\sigma}_f \mathbf{n}_f + \boldsymbol{\sigma}_p \mathbf{n}_p = \mathbf{0} \quad \text{on} \quad \Gamma_{fp} \times (0,T], \tag{2.10a}$$

$$\boldsymbol{\sigma}_f \mathbf{n}_f + \mu\, \alpha_{\mathtt{BJS}} \sum_{j=1}^{n-1} \sqrt{\mathbf{K}_j^{-1}} \left(\left(\mathbf{u}_f - \frac{\partial \boldsymbol{\eta}_p}{\partial t}\right) \cdot \mathbf{t}_{f,j}\right) \mathbf{t}_{f,j} = -p_p \mathbf{n}_f \quad \text{on} \quad \Gamma_{fp} \times (0,T], \tag{2.10b}$$

where $\mathbf{t}_{f,j}$, $1 \le j \le n-1$, is an orthogonal system of unit tangent vectors on Γ_{fp}, $\mathbf{K}_j = (\mathbf{K}\,\mathbf{t}_{f,j}) \cdot \mathbf{t}_{f,j}$, and $\alpha_{\mathtt{BJS}} \ge 0$ is an experimentally determined friction coefficient. The equations in (2.10a) correspond to mass conservation and conservation of momentum on Γ_{fp}, respectively, whereas (2.10b) can be decomposed into its normal and tangential components, as follows:

$$(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_f \mathbf{n}_f) \cdot \mathbf{n}_f = -p_p, \quad (\boldsymbol{\sigma}_f \mathbf{n}_f) \cdot \mathbf{t}_{f,j} = -\mu\, \alpha_{\mathtt{BJS}} \sqrt{\mathbf{K}_j^{-1}} \left(\mathbf{u}_f - \frac{\partial \boldsymbol{\eta}_p}{\partial t}\right) \cdot \mathbf{t}_{f,j} \quad \text{on} \quad \Gamma_{fp} \times (0,T],$$

representing balance of force and the Beavers–Joseph–Saffman (BJS) slip with friction condition, respectively. The second equation in (2.10a) and (2.10b) can be rewritten in terms of tensor $\mathbf{T}_f$ as follows:

$$\mathbf{T}_f \mathbf{n}_f + \rho(\mathbf{u}_f \otimes \mathbf{u}_f)\mathbf{n}_f + \boldsymbol{\sigma}_p \mathbf{n}_p = \mathbf{0} \quad \text{on} \quad \Gamma_{fp} \times (0,T], \tag{2.11a}$$

$$\mathbf{T}_f \mathbf{n}_f + \rho(\mathbf{u}_f \otimes \mathbf{u}_f)\mathbf{n}_f + \mu\, \alpha_{BJS} \sum_{j=1}^{n-1} \sqrt{\mathbf{K}_j^{-1}} \left(\left(\mathbf{u}_f - \frac{\partial \boldsymbol{\eta}_p}{\partial t}\right) \cdot \mathbf{t}_{f,j}\right) \mathbf{t}_{f,j} = -p_p \mathbf{n}_f \quad \text{on } \Gamma_{fp} \times (0,T]. \tag{2.11b}$$

Finally, the above system of equations is complemented by the initial condition $p_p(\mathbf{x},0) = p_{p,0}(\mathbf{x})$ in Ω_p. In Lemma 4.11 below, we will construct compatible initial data for the rest of the variables from $p_{p,0}$ in a way that all equations in the system (2.4)–(2.11), except for the unsteady conservation of mass equation in (2.8b), hold at $t = 0$.

3. The weak formulation

In this section, we proceed analogously to Ambartsumyan *et al.* (2019a, Section 3) (see also Gatica *et al.*, 2014; Caucao *et al.*, 2017) and derive a weak formulation of the coupled problem given by (2.4), (2.8), (2.10) and (2.11).

3.1 *Preliminaries*

We first introduce further notation and definitions. Given $\star \in \{f,p\}$, we set

$$(p,w)_{\Omega_\star} := \int_{\Omega_\star} p\, w, \quad (\mathbf{u},\mathbf{v})_{\Omega_\star} := \int_{\Omega_\star} \mathbf{u} \cdot \mathbf{v} \quad \text{and} \quad (\mathbf{T},\mathbf{R})_{\Omega_\star} := \int_{\Omega_\star} \mathbf{T} : \mathbf{R}.$$

In addition, similarly to Camaño *et al.* (2016); Caucao *et al.* (2017), in the sequel, we will employ the following Hilbert spaces to deal with the nonlinear pseudostress tensor and velocity of the Navier–Stokes equation, respectively:

$$\mathbb{X}_f := \left\{\mathbf{R}_f \in \mathbb{H}(\mathbf{div};\Omega_f) : \quad \mathbf{R}_f \mathbf{n}_f = \mathbf{0} \quad \text{on} \quad \Gamma_f^{\mathrm{N}}\right\}, \quad \mathbf{V}_f := \left\{\mathbf{v}_f \in \mathbf{H}^1(\Omega_f) : \quad \mathbf{v}_f = \mathbf{0} \quad \text{on} \quad \Gamma_f^{\mathrm{D}}\right\},$$

endowed with the corresponding norms

$$\|\mathbf{R}_f\|_{\mathbb{X}_f} := \|\mathbf{R}_f\|_{\mathbb{H}(\mathbf{div};\Omega_f)}, \quad \|\mathbf{v}_f\|_{\mathbf{V}_f} := \|\mathbf{v}_f\|_{\mathbf{H}^1(\Omega_f)}.$$

For the unknowns in the Biot region, we introduce the following Hilbert spaces:

$$\begin{aligned}
&\mathbb{X}_p := \left\{\boldsymbol{\tau}_p \in \mathbb{H}(\mathbf{div};\Omega_p) : \boldsymbol{\tau}_p\mathbf{n}_p = \mathbf{0} \ \text{ on } \ \tilde{\Gamma}_p^{\mathrm{N}}\right\}, \ \mathbf{V}_s := \mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_p),\\
&\mathbb{Q}_p := \left\{\boldsymbol{\chi}_p \in \mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_p) : \ \boldsymbol{\chi}_p^{\mathrm{t}} = -\boldsymbol{\chi}_p\right\},\\
&\mathbf{V}_p := \left\{\mathbf{v}_p \in \mathbf{H}(\mathrm{div};\Omega_p) : \ \mathbf{v}_p\cdot\mathbf{n}_p = 0 \ \text{ on } \ \Gamma_p^{\mathrm{N}}\right\}, \quad \mathrm{W}_p := \mathrm{L}^2(\Omega_p),
\end{aligned}$$

endowed with the standard norms

$$\begin{aligned}
&\|\boldsymbol{\tau}_p\|_{\mathbb{X}_p} := \|\boldsymbol{\tau}_p\|_{\mathbb{H}(\mathbf{div};\Omega_p)}, \quad \|\mathbf{v}_s\|_{\mathbf{V}_s} := \|\mathbf{v}_s\|_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_p)}, \quad \|\boldsymbol{\chi}_p\|_{\mathbb{Q}_p} := \|\boldsymbol{\chi}_p\|_{\mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_p)},\\
&\|\mathbf{v}_p\|_{\mathbf{V}_p} := \|\mathbf{v}_p\|_{\mathbf{H}(\mathrm{div};\Omega_p)}, \quad \|w_p\|_{\mathrm{W}_p} := \|w_p\|_{\mathrm{L}^2(\Omega_p)}.
\end{aligned}$$

Finally, we need to introduce the spaces of traces $\Lambda_p := (\mathbf{V}_p\cdot\mathbf{n}_p|_{\Gamma_{fp}})'$ and $\boldsymbol{\Lambda}_s := (\mathbb{X}_p\,\mathbf{n}_p|_{\Gamma_{fp}})'$. According to the normal trace theorem, since $\mathbf{v}_p \in \mathbf{V}_p \subset \mathbf{H}(\mathrm{div};\Omega_p)$, then $\mathbf{v}_p\cdot\mathbf{n}_p \in \mathrm{H}^{-1/2}(\partial\Omega_p)$. It is shown in Galvis & Sarkis (2007) that, if $\mathbf{v}_p\cdot\mathbf{n}_p = 0$ on $\partial\Omega_p \setminus \Gamma_{fp}$, then $\mathbf{v}_p\cdot\mathbf{n}_p \in \mathrm{H}^{-1/2}(\Gamma_{fp})$. This argument has been modified in Ambartsumyan *et al.* (2018) for the case $\mathbf{v}_p\cdot\mathbf{n}_p = 0$ on Γ_p^{N} and $\mathrm{dist}\,(\Gamma_p^{\mathrm{D}},\Gamma_{fp}) \geq s > 0$. In particular, it holds that

$$\left\langle\mathbf{v}_p\cdot\mathbf{n}_p,\xi\right\rangle_{\Gamma_{fp}} \leq C\,\|\mathbf{v}_p\|_{\mathbf{H}(\mathrm{div};\Omega_p)}\|\xi\|_{\mathrm{H}^{1/2}(\Gamma_{fp})} \quad \forall\,\mathbf{v}_p \in \mathbf{V}_p,\ \xi \in \mathrm{H}^{1/2}(\Gamma_{fp}). \tag{3.1}$$

Similarly,

$$\langle\boldsymbol{\tau}_p\,\mathbf{n}_p,\boldsymbol{\phi}\rangle_{\Gamma_{fp}} \leq C\|\boldsymbol{\tau}_p\|_{\mathbb{H}(\mathbf{div};\Omega_p)}\|\boldsymbol{\phi}\|_{\mathbf{H}^{1/2}(\Gamma_{fp})} \quad \forall\,\boldsymbol{\tau}_p \in \mathbb{X}_p,\ \boldsymbol{\phi} \in \mathbf{H}^{1/2}(\Gamma_{fp}). \tag{3.2}$$

Therefore, we can take

$$\Lambda_p := \mathrm{H}^{1/2}(\Gamma_{fp}) \quad \text{and} \quad \boldsymbol{\Lambda}_s := \mathbf{H}^{1/2}(\Gamma_{fp}) \tag{3.3}$$

endowed with the norms $\|\xi\|_{\Lambda_p} := \|\xi\|_{\mathrm{H}^{1/2}(\Gamma_{fp})}$ and $\|\boldsymbol{\phi}\|_{\boldsymbol{\Lambda}_s} := \|\boldsymbol{\phi}\|_{\mathbf{H}^{1/2}(\Gamma_{fp})}$.

3.2 *Lagrange multiplier weak formulation*

We now proceed with the derivation of the Lagrange multiplier weak formulation for the coupling of the Navier–Stokes and Biot problems. To this end, and inspired by Ambartsumyan *et al.* (2019a), we begin by introducing the structure velocity $\mathbf{u}_s := \partial_t\,\boldsymbol{\eta}_p \in \mathbf{V}_s$ and two Lagrange multipliers that represent the traces of the structure velocity and the Darcy pressure on the interface, respectively:

$$\boldsymbol{\theta} := \mathbf{u}_s|_{\Gamma_{fp}} \in \boldsymbol{\Lambda}_s \quad \text{and} \quad \lambda := p_p|_{\Gamma_{fp}} \in \Lambda_p,$$

where we use the notation $\partial_t := \frac{\partial}{\partial t}$. In order to impose the symmetry of $\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p$ in a weak sense, we introduce the rotation operator $\boldsymbol{\rho}_p := \frac{1}{2}\left(\nabla\boldsymbol{\eta}_p - (\nabla\boldsymbol{\eta}_p)^{\mathrm{t}}\right)$. In the weak formulation, we will use its time derivative, that is, the structure rotation velocity

$$\boldsymbol{\gamma}_p := \partial_t \boldsymbol{\rho}_p = \frac{1}{2}\big(\nabla \mathbf{u}_s - (\nabla \mathbf{u}_s)^{\mathrm{t}}\big) \in \mathbb{Q}_p.$$

From the definition of the elastic and poroelastic stress tensors $\boldsymbol{\sigma}_e, \boldsymbol{\sigma}_p$ (cf. (2.5)) and recalling that $\boldsymbol{\sigma}_e$ is connected to the displacement $\boldsymbol{\eta}_p$ through the relation $A(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_e) = \mathbf{e}(\boldsymbol{\eta}_p)$, we deduce the identities

$$\operatorname{div}(\boldsymbol{\eta}_p) \;=\; \operatorname{tr}(\mathbf{e}(\boldsymbol{\eta}_p)) \;=\; \operatorname{tr}(A(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_e)) \;=\; \operatorname{tr}(A(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p + \alpha_p p_p \mathbf{I})), \tag{3.4}$$

$$\text{and} \quad \partial_t A(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p + \alpha_p p_p \mathbf{I}) \;=\; \nabla \mathbf{u}_s - \boldsymbol{\gamma}_p. \tag{3.5}$$

Then we test the first equation in (2.4a), the second equation of (2.8a) and (3.5) with arbitrary $\mathbf{R}_f \in \mathbb{X}_f$, $\mathbf{v}_p \in \mathbf{V}_p$ and $\boldsymbol{\tau}_p \in \mathbb{X}_p$, respectively, integrate by parts and utilize the fact that $\mathbf{T}_f^{\mathrm{d}} : \mathbf{R}_f = \mathbf{T}_f^{\mathrm{d}} : \mathbf{R}_f^{\mathrm{d}}$. We further test (2.8b) with $w_p \in \mathrm{W}_p$ employing (3.4) and impose the remaining equations weakly, as well as the symmetry of $\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p$ and the transmission conditions in the first equation of (2.10a) and (2.11) to obtain the following variational problem. Given $\mathbf{f}_f \in \mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_f)$, $\mathbf{f}_p \in \mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_p)$ and $q_p : [0,T] \to \mathrm{L}^2(\Omega_p)$, find $(\mathbf{T}_f, \mathbf{u}_f, \boldsymbol{\sigma}_p, \mathbf{u}_s, \boldsymbol{\gamma}_p, \mathbf{u}_p, p_p, \lambda, \boldsymbol{\theta}) : [0,T] \to \mathbb{X}_f \times \mathbf{V}_f \times \mathbb{X}_p \times \mathbf{V}_s \times \mathbb{Q}_p \times \mathbf{V}_p \times \mathrm{W}_p \times \Lambda_p \times \boldsymbol{\Lambda}_s$, such that for all $\mathbf{R}_f \in \mathbb{X}_f, \mathbf{v}_f \in \mathbf{V}_f, \boldsymbol{\tau}_p \in \mathbb{X}_p, \mathbf{v}_s \in \mathbf{V}_s, \boldsymbol{\chi}_p \in \mathbb{Q}_p, \mathbf{v}_p \in \mathbf{V}_p, w_p \in \mathrm{W}_p, \xi \in \Lambda_p, \boldsymbol{\phi} \in \boldsymbol{\Lambda}_s$, and for a.e. $t \in (0,T)$,

$$\frac{1}{2\mu}(\mathbf{T}_f^{\mathrm{d}}, \mathbf{R}_f^{\mathrm{d}})_{\Omega_f} + (\mathbf{u}_f, \mathbf{div}(\mathbf{R}_f))_{\Omega_f} + (\boldsymbol{\gamma}_f(\mathbf{u}_f), \mathbf{R}_f)_{\Omega_f} - \left\langle \mathbf{R}_f \mathbf{n}_f, \mathbf{u}_f \right\rangle_{\Gamma_{fp}} + \frac{\rho}{2\mu}((\mathbf{u}_f \otimes \mathbf{u}_f)^{\mathrm{d}}, \mathbf{R}_f)_{\Omega_f} = 0, \tag{3.6a}$$

$$\begin{aligned} &- (\mathbf{v}_f, \mathbf{div}(\mathbf{T}_f))_{\Omega_f} - (\mathbf{T}_f, \boldsymbol{\gamma}_f(\mathbf{v}_f))_{\Omega_f} + \left\langle \mathbf{T}_f \mathbf{n}_f, \mathbf{v}_f \right\rangle_{\Gamma_{fp}} + \rho \left\langle \mathbf{u}_f \cdot \mathbf{n}_f, \mathbf{u}_f \cdot \mathbf{v}_f \right\rangle_{\Gamma_{fp}} \\ &+ \mu\, \alpha_{BJS} \sum_{j=1}^{n-1} \left\langle \sqrt{\mathbf{K}_j^{-1}} \left(\mathbf{u}_f - \boldsymbol{\theta}\right) \cdot \mathbf{t}_{f,j}, \mathbf{v}_f \cdot \mathbf{t}_{f,j} \right\rangle_{\Gamma_{fp}} + \left\langle \mathbf{v}_f \cdot \mathbf{n}_f, \lambda \right\rangle_{\Gamma_{fp}} = (\mathbf{f}_f, \mathbf{v}_f)_{\Omega_f}, \end{aligned} \tag{3.6b}$$

$$(\partial_t A(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p + \alpha_p p_p \mathbf{I}), \boldsymbol{\tau}_p)_{\Omega_p} + (\mathbf{u}_s, \mathbf{div}(\boldsymbol{\tau}_p))_{\Omega_p} + (\boldsymbol{\gamma}_p, \boldsymbol{\tau}_p)_{\Omega_p} - \left\langle \boldsymbol{\tau}_p \mathbf{n}_p, \boldsymbol{\theta} \right\rangle_{\Gamma_{fp}} = 0, \tag{3.6c}$$

$$- (\mathbf{v}_s, \mathbf{div}(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p))_{\Omega_p} = (\mathbf{f}_p, \mathbf{v}_s)_{\Omega_p}, \tag{3.6d}$$

$$- (\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p, \boldsymbol{\chi}_p)_{\Omega_p} = 0, \tag{3.6e}$$

$$\mu(\mathbf{K}^{-1}\mathbf{u}_p, \mathbf{v}_p)_{\Omega_p} - (p_p, \operatorname{div}(\mathbf{v}_p))_{\Omega_p} + \left\langle \mathbf{v}_p \cdot \mathbf{n}_p, \lambda \right\rangle_{\Gamma_{fp}} = 0, \tag{3.6f}$$

$$s_0\, (\partial_t p_p, w_p)_{\Omega_p} + (\partial_t A(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p + \alpha_p p_p \mathbf{I}), \alpha_p w_p \mathbf{I})_{\Omega_p} + (w_p, \operatorname{div}(\mathbf{u}_p))_{\Omega_p} = (q_p, w_p)_{\Omega_p}, \tag{3.6g}$$

$$- \left\langle \mathbf{u}_f \cdot \mathbf{n}_f + \left(\boldsymbol{\theta} + \mathbf{u}_p\right) \cdot \mathbf{n}_p, \xi \right\rangle_{\Gamma_{fp}} = 0, \tag{3.6h}$$

$$\left\langle \boldsymbol{\sigma}_p \mathbf{n}_p, \boldsymbol{\phi} \right\rangle_{\Gamma_{fp}} - \mu\, \alpha_{BJS} \sum_{j=1}^{n-1} \left\langle \sqrt{\mathbf{K}_j^{-1}} \left(\mathbf{u}_f - \boldsymbol{\theta}\right) \cdot \mathbf{t}_{f,j}, \boldsymbol{\phi} \cdot \mathbf{t}_{f,j} \right\rangle_{\Gamma_{fp}} + \left\langle \boldsymbol{\phi} \cdot \mathbf{n}_p, \lambda \right\rangle_{\Gamma_{fp}} = 0. \tag{3.6i}$$

Note that (3.6a)–(3.6b) correspond to the Navier–Stokes equations, (3.6c)–(3.6e) are the elasticity equations and (3.6f)–(3.6g) are the Darcy equations, whereas (3.6h)–(3.6i), together with the interface terms in (3.6b), enforce weakly the interface conditions. We will discuss the construction of initial conditions for the problem (3.6) later on in Lemma 4.11.

REMARK 3.1 The time differentiated equation (3.6c) allows us to eliminate the displacement variable $\boldsymbol{\eta}_p$ and obtain a formulation that uses only $\mathbf{u}_s$. As part of the analysis we will construct suitable initial data such that, by integrating (3.6c) in time, we can recover the original equation

$$(A(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p + \alpha p_p \mathbf{I}), \boldsymbol{\tau}_p)_{\Omega_p} + (\boldsymbol{\eta}_p, \mathbf{div}(\boldsymbol{\tau}_p))_{\Omega_p} + (\boldsymbol{\rho}_p, \boldsymbol{\tau}_p)_{\Omega_p} - \langle \boldsymbol{\tau}_p \mathbf{n}_p, \boldsymbol{\psi} \rangle_{\Gamma_{fp}} = 0, \tag{3.7}$$

where $\boldsymbol{\psi} := \boldsymbol{\eta}_p|_{\Gamma_{fp}}$.

We observe that, similarly to Alvarez *et al.* (2019, eq. (3.5)) (see also Gatica *et al.*, 2020, for an alternative approach) and since $\{\boldsymbol{\gamma}_f(\mathbf{v}_f) \,:\, \mathbf{v}_f \in \mathbf{H}^1(\Omega_f)\}$ is a proper-subspace of the skew-symmetric tensor space, the term $(\mathbf{T}_f, \boldsymbol{\gamma}_f(\mathbf{v}_f))_{\Omega_f}$ in (3.6b) imposes the symmetry of $\mathbf{T}_f$ in an ultra-weak sense. Notice also that the terms $((\mathbf{u}_f \otimes \mathbf{u}_f)^{\mathrm{d}}, \mathbf{R}_f)_{\Omega_f}$ in (3.6a) and $\langle \mathbf{u}_f \cdot \mathbf{n}_f, \mathbf{u}_f \cdot \mathbf{v}_f \rangle_{\Gamma_{fp}}$ in (3.6b) require $\mathbf{u}_f$ to live in a smaller space than $\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_f)$. In fact, by applying the Cauchy–Schwarz and Hölder inequalities, the continuous injections $\mathbf{i}_c$ of $\mathbf{H}^1(\Omega_f)$ into $\mathbf{L}^4(\Omega_f)$ and $\mathbf{i}_\Gamma$ of $\mathbf{H}^{1/2}(\partial\Omega_f)$ into $\mathbf{L}^4(\partial\Omega_f)$ and the continuous trace operator $\gamma_0 : \mathbf{H}^1(\Omega_f) \to \mathbf{L}^2(\partial\Omega_f)$, there hold

$$\left|((\mathbf{u}_f \otimes \mathbf{w}_f)^{\mathrm{d}}, \mathbf{R}_f)_{\Omega_f}\right| \le \|\mathbf{i}_c\|^2 \|\mathbf{w}_f\|_{\mathbf{H}^1(\Omega_f)} \|\mathbf{u}_f\|_{\mathbf{H}^1(\Omega_f)} \|\mathbf{R}_f\|_{\mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_f)} \tag{3.8}$$

and

$$\left|\langle \mathbf{w}_f \cdot \mathbf{n}_f, \mathbf{u}_f \cdot \mathbf{v}_f \rangle_{\Gamma_{fp}}\right| \le \|\mathbf{i}_\Gamma\|^2 \|\gamma_0\| \|\mathbf{w}_f\|_{\mathbf{H}^1(\Omega_f)} \|\mathbf{u}_f\|_{\mathbf{H}^1(\Omega_f)} \|\mathbf{v}_f\|_{\mathbf{H}^1(\Omega_f)}, \tag{3.9}$$

for all $\mathbf{u}_f, \mathbf{v}_f, \mathbf{w}_f \in \mathbf{H}^1(\Omega_f)$ and $\mathbf{R}_f \in \mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_f)$. Accordingly, we look for $\mathbf{u}_f$ in $\mathbf{V}_f$. We also have

$$\left|\langle \mathbf{R}_f \mathbf{n}_f, \mathbf{v}_f \rangle_{\Gamma_{fp}}\right| \le C \|\mathbf{R}_f\|_{\mathbb{H}(\mathbf{div};\Omega_f)} \|\mathbf{v}_f\|_{\mathbf{H}^1(\Omega_f)} \quad \forall\, \mathbf{R}_f \in \mathbb{X}_f,\ \mathbf{v}_f \in \mathbf{V}_f. \tag{3.10}$$

In the case of Γ_f^{N} adjacent to Γ_{fp}, (3.10) follows similarly to (3.2). In the case of Γ_f^{D} adjacent to Γ_{fp}, it follows from $\langle \mathbf{R}_f \mathbf{n}_f, \mathbf{v}_f \rangle_{\Gamma_{fp}} = \langle \mathbf{R}_f \mathbf{n}_f, \tilde{\mathbf{v}}_f \rangle_{\partial\Omega_f}$, where $\tilde{\mathbf{v}}_f \in \mathbf{H}^{1/2}(\partial\Omega_f)$ is the extension by zero of $\mathbf{v}_f|_{\Gamma_{fp}}$. In addition, it holds that

$$\left|\langle \mathbf{v}_f \cdot \mathbf{t}_{f,j}, \boldsymbol{\phi} \cdot \mathbf{t}_{f,j} \rangle_{\Gamma_{fp}}\right| \le \|\gamma_0\| \|\mathbf{v}_f\|_{\mathbf{H}^1(\Omega_f)} \|\boldsymbol{\phi}\|_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Gamma_{fp})} \quad \forall\, \mathbf{v}_f \in \mathbf{V}_f,\ \boldsymbol{\phi} \in \boldsymbol{\Lambda}_s, \tag{3.11}$$

$$\left|\langle \mathbf{v}_f \cdot \mathbf{n}_f, \xi \rangle_{\Gamma_{fp}}\right| \le \|\gamma_0\| \|\mathbf{v}_f\|_{\mathbf{H}^1(\Omega_f)} \|\xi\|_{\mathrm{L}^2(\Gamma_{fp})} \quad \forall\, \mathbf{v}_f \in \mathbf{V}_f,\ \xi \in \Lambda_p. \tag{3.12}$$

Finally, in order to obtain control on $\mathbf{T}_f$ in the $\mathbb{H}(\mathbf{div};\Omega_f)$-norm and on $\mathbf{u}_f$ in the $\mathbf{H}^1(\Omega_f)$-norm, we augment the system with the following redundant Galerkin-type terms:

$$\kappa_1 \left(\mathbf{div}(\mathbf{T}_f) + \mathbf{f}_f, \mathbf{div}(\mathbf{R}_f)\right)_{\Omega_f} = 0 \quad \forall\, \mathbf{R}_f \in \mathbb{X}_f, \tag{3.13a}$$

$$\kappa_2 \left(\mathbf{e}(\mathbf{u}_f) - \frac{\rho}{2\mu}(\mathbf{u}_f \otimes \mathbf{u}_f)^{\mathrm{d}} - \frac{1}{2\mu}\mathbf{T}_f^{\mathrm{d}}, \mathbf{e}(\mathbf{v}_f)\right)_{\Omega_f} = 0 \quad \forall\, \mathbf{v}_f \in \mathbf{V}_f, \tag{3.13b}$$

where κ_1 and κ_2 are positive parameters to be specified later. Notice that the above terms are consistent expressions arising from the equilibrium and constitutive equations. It is easy to see that each solution of the original system is also a solution of the augmented one, and hence by solving the latter we find all solutions of the former. We emphasize that without the augmented terms, it is not possible to control $\mathbf{T}_f$ in the $\mathbb{H}(\mathbf{div};\Omega_f)$-norm and $\mathbf{u}_f$ in the $\mathbf{H}^1(\Omega_f)$-norm, so they are needed to obtain a well-posed formulation with the current choice of functional spaces.

There are many different ways of ordering the equations in (3.6). For the sake of the subsequent analysis, we proceed as in Ambartsumyan *et al.* (2019a) and Gatica *et al.* (2020), and adopt one leading to an evolution problem in a mixed form, by grouping the spaces, unknowns and test functions as follows:

$$\mathbf{Q} := \mathbb{X}_p \times \mathrm{W}_p \times \mathbf{V}_p \times \mathbb{X}_f \times \mathbf{V}_f \times \boldsymbol{\Lambda}_s, \quad \mathbf{S} := \Lambda_p \times \mathbf{V}_s \times \mathbb{Q}_p,$$

$$\mathbf{p} := (\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p, p_p, \mathbf{u}_p, \mathbf{T}_f, \mathbf{u}_f, \boldsymbol{\theta}) \in \mathbf{Q}, \quad \mathbf{r} := (\lambda, \mathbf{u}_s, \boldsymbol{\gamma}_p) \in \mathbf{S},$$

$$\mathbf{q} := (\boldsymbol{\tau}_p, w_p, \mathbf{v}_p, \mathbf{R}_f, \mathbf{v}_f, \boldsymbol{\phi}) \in \mathbf{Q}, \quad \mathbf{s} := (\xi, \mathbf{v}_s, \boldsymbol{\chi}_p) \in \mathbf{S},$$

where the spaces $\mathbf{Q}$ and $\mathbf{S}$ are respectively endowed with the norms

$$\|\mathbf{q}\|^2_{\mathbf{Q}} = \|\boldsymbol{\tau}_p\|^2_{\mathbb{X}_p} + \|w_p\|^2_{\mathrm{W}_p} + \|\mathbf{v}_p\|^2_{\mathbf{V}_p} + \|\mathbf{R}_f\|^2_{\mathbb{X}_f} + \|\mathbf{v}_f\|^2_{\mathbf{V}_f} + \|\boldsymbol{\phi}\|^2_{\boldsymbol{\Lambda}_s},$$

$$\|\mathbf{s}\|^2_{\mathbf{S}} = \|\xi\|^2_{\Lambda_p} + \|\mathbf{v}_s\|^2_{\mathbf{V}_s} + \|\boldsymbol{\chi}_p\|^2_{\mathbb{Q}_p}.$$

Furthermore, given $\mathbf{w}_f \in \mathbf{V}_f$, we set the bilinear forms

$$a_e(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p, p_p; \boldsymbol{\tau}_p, w_p) := (A(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p + \alpha_p p_p \mathbf{I}), \boldsymbol{\tau}_p + \alpha_p w_p \mathbf{I})_{\Omega_p}, \quad a_p(\mathbf{u}_p, \mathbf{v}_p) := \mu\,(\mathbf{K}^{-1}\mathbf{u}_p, \mathbf{v}_p)_{\Omega_p}, \tag{3.14a}$$

$$\begin{aligned} a_f(\mathbf{T}_f, \mathbf{u}_f; \mathbf{R}_f, \mathbf{v}_f) :=\ & \frac{1}{2\,\mu}\,(\mathbf{T}_f^{\mathrm{d}}, \mathbf{R}_f^{\mathrm{d}})_{\Omega_f} + \kappa_1\,(\mathbf{div}(\mathbf{T}_f), \mathbf{div}(\mathbf{R}_f))_{\Omega_f} + \kappa_2\,(\mathbf{e}(\mathbf{u}_f), \mathbf{e}(\mathbf{v}_f))_{\Omega_f} \\ & - \frac{\kappa_2}{2\,\mu}\left(\mathbf{T}_f^{\mathrm{d}}, \mathbf{e}(\mathbf{v}_f)\right)_{\Omega_f} + (\mathbf{u}_f, \mathbf{div}(\mathbf{R}_f))_{\Omega_f} - (\mathbf{v}_f, \mathbf{div}(\mathbf{T}_f))_{\Omega_f} \\ & + (\boldsymbol{\gamma}_f(\mathbf{u}_f), \mathbf{R}_f)_{\Omega_f} - (\mathbf{T}_f, \boldsymbol{\gamma}_f(\mathbf{v}_f))_{\Omega_f} + \left\langle \mathbf{T}_f\mathbf{n}_f, \mathbf{v}_f \right\rangle_{\Gamma_{fp}} - \left\langle \mathbf{R}_f\mathbf{n}_f, \mathbf{u}_f \right\rangle_{\Gamma_{fp}}, \end{aligned} \tag{3.14b}$$

$$\kappa_{\mathbf{w}_f}(\mathbf{T}_f, \mathbf{u}_f; \mathbf{R}_f, \mathbf{v}_f) := \frac{\rho}{2\,\mu}((\mathbf{u}_f \otimes \mathbf{w}_f)^{\mathrm{d}}, \mathbf{R}_f - \kappa_2\,\mathbf{e}(\mathbf{v}_f))_{\Omega_f} + \rho\left\langle \mathbf{w}_f \cdot \mathbf{n}_f, \mathbf{u}_f \cdot \mathbf{v}_f \right\rangle_{\Gamma_{fp}}, \tag{3.14c}$$

$$b_{\mathbf{n}_p}(\boldsymbol{\tau}_p, \boldsymbol{\phi}) := \left\langle \boldsymbol{\tau}_p\mathbf{n}_p, \boldsymbol{\phi} \right\rangle_{\Gamma_{fp}}, \quad b_{\mathrm{sk}}(\boldsymbol{\chi}_p, \boldsymbol{\tau}_p) := (\boldsymbol{\chi}_p, \boldsymbol{\tau}_p)_{\Omega_p}, \tag{3.14d}$$

$$b_p(w_p, \mathbf{v}_p) := -\,(w_p, \mathrm{div}(\mathbf{v}_p))_{\Omega_p}, \quad b_s(\mathbf{v}_s, \boldsymbol{\tau}_p) := (\mathbf{v}_s, \mathbf{div}(\boldsymbol{\tau}_p))_{\Omega_p}, \tag{3.14e}$$

and the interface terms

$$a_{\mathrm{BJS}}(\mathbf{u}_f, \boldsymbol{\theta}; \mathbf{v}_f, \boldsymbol{\phi}) := \mu\,\alpha_{BJS} \sum_{j=1}^{n-1} \left\langle \sqrt{\mathbf{K}_j^{-1}}(\mathbf{u}_f - \boldsymbol{\theta}) \cdot \mathbf{t}_{f,j}, (\mathbf{v}_f - \boldsymbol{\phi}) \cdot \mathbf{t}_{f,j} \right\rangle_{\Gamma_{fp}}, \tag{3.15a}$$

$$b_\Gamma(\mathbf{v}_p, \mathbf{v}_f, \boldsymbol{\phi}; \xi) := \left\langle \mathbf{v}_f \cdot \mathbf{n}_f + (\boldsymbol{\phi} + \mathbf{v}_p) \cdot \mathbf{n}_p, \xi \right\rangle_{\Gamma_{fp}}. \tag{3.15b}$$

Hence, the Lagrange variational formulation for the system (3.6) and (3.13) results in

$$
\begin{aligned}
&s_0(\partial_t p_p, w_p)_{\Omega_p} + a_e(\partial_t \boldsymbol{\sigma}_p, \partial_t p_p; \boldsymbol{\tau}_p, w_p) + a_p(\mathbf{u}_p, \mathbf{v}_p) + a_f(\mathbf{T}_f, \mathbf{u}_f; \mathbf{R}_f, \mathbf{v}_f) + \kappa_{\mathbf{u}_f}(\mathbf{T}_f, \mathbf{u}_f; \mathbf{R}_f, \mathbf{v}_f)\\
&\quad + \ a_{\mathtt{BJS}}(\mathbf{u}_f, \boldsymbol{\theta}; \mathbf{v}_f, \boldsymbol{\phi}) + b_p(p_p, \mathbf{v}_p) - b_p(w_p, \mathbf{u}_p) + b_{\mathbf{n}_p}(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p, \boldsymbol{\phi}) - b_{\mathbf{n}_p}(\boldsymbol{\tau}_p, \boldsymbol{\theta})\\
&\quad + \ b_s(\mathbf{u}_s, \boldsymbol{\tau}_p) + b_{\mathrm{sk}}(\boldsymbol{\gamma}_p, \boldsymbol{\tau}_p) + b_\Gamma(\mathbf{v}_p, \mathbf{v}_f, \boldsymbol{\phi}; \lambda) \ = \ (q_p, w_p)_{\Omega_p} + (\mathbf{f}_f, \mathbf{v}_f - \kappa_1\, \mathbf{div}(\mathbf{R}_f))_{\Omega_f},\\
&\quad - \ b_s(\mathbf{v}_s, \boldsymbol{\sigma}_p) - b_{\mathrm{sk}}(\boldsymbol{\chi}_p, \boldsymbol{\sigma}_p) - b_\Gamma(\mathbf{u}_p, \mathbf{u}_f, \boldsymbol{\theta}; \xi) \ = \ (\mathbf{f}_p, \mathbf{v}_s)_{\Omega_p}.
\end{aligned}
\tag{3.16}
$$

We can write (3.16) in an operator notation as a degenerate evolution problem in a mixed form:

$$
\begin{aligned}
\frac{\partial}{\partial t}\,\mathcal{E}(\mathbf{p}(t)) + (\mathcal{A} + \mathcal{K}_{\mathbf{u}_f(t)})(\mathbf{p}(t)) + \mathcal{B}'(\mathbf{r}(t)) \ &= \ \mathbf{F}(t) \quad \text{in } \mathbf{Q}',\\
-\mathcal{B}(\mathbf{p}(t)) \ &= \ \mathbf{G} \qquad \text{in } \mathbf{S}',
\end{aligned}
\tag{3.17}
$$

where, given $\mathbf{w}_f \in \mathbf{V}_f$, the operators $\mathcal{E} : \mathbf{Q} \to \mathbf{Q}'$, $\mathcal{A} : \mathbf{Q} \to \mathbf{Q}'$, $\mathcal{K}_{\mathbf{w}_f} : \mathbf{Q} \to \mathbf{Q}'$, $\mathcal{B} : \mathbf{Q} \to \mathbf{S}'$ and the functionals $\mathbf{F} \in \mathbf{Q}'$, $\mathbf{G} \in \mathbf{S}'$ are defined as follows:

$$
\mathcal{E}(\mathbf{p})(\mathbf{q}) := s_0(p_p, w_p)_{\Omega_p} + a_e(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p, p_p; \boldsymbol{\tau}_p, w_p), \tag{3.18a}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
\mathcal{A}(\mathbf{p})(\mathbf{q}) := {}& a_p(\mathbf{u}_p, \mathbf{v}_p) + a_f(\mathbf{T}_f, \mathbf{u}_f; \mathbf{R}_f, \mathbf{v}_f) + a_{\mathtt{BJS}}(\mathbf{u}_f, \boldsymbol{\theta}; \mathbf{v}_f, \boldsymbol{\phi})\\
&+ b_p(p_p, \mathbf{v}_p) - b_p(w_p, \mathbf{u}_p) + b_{\mathbf{n}_p}(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p, \boldsymbol{\phi}) - b_{\mathbf{n}_p}(\boldsymbol{\tau}_p, \boldsymbol{\theta}),
\end{aligned}
\tag{3.18b}
$$

$$
\mathcal{K}_{\mathbf{w}_f}(\mathbf{p})(\mathbf{q}) := \kappa_{\mathbf{w}_f}(\mathbf{T}_f, \mathbf{u}_f; \mathbf{R}_f, \mathbf{v}_f), \tag{3.18c}
$$

$$
\mathcal{B}(\mathbf{q})(\mathbf{s}) := b_s(\mathbf{v}_s, \boldsymbol{\tau}_p) + b_{\mathrm{sk}}(\boldsymbol{\chi}_p, \boldsymbol{\tau}_p) + b_\Gamma(\mathbf{v}_p, \mathbf{v}_f, \boldsymbol{\phi}; \xi), \tag{3.18d}
$$

$$
\mathbf{F}(\mathbf{q}) := (q_p, w_p)_{\Omega_p} + (\mathbf{f}_f, \mathbf{v}_f - \kappa_1\, \mathbf{div}(\mathbf{R}_f))_{\Omega_f}, \tag{3.18e}
$$

$$
\mathbf{G}(\mathbf{s}) := (\mathbf{f}_p, \mathbf{v}_s)_{\Omega_p}. \tag{3.18f}
$$

3.3 *Stability properties*

Let us now discuss the continuity properties of the operators and functionals in (3.18).

LEMMA 3.2 The operators $\mathcal{E}$, $\mathcal{A}$ and $\mathcal{B}$ are linear and continuous:

$$
\big|\mathcal{E}(\mathbf{p})(\mathbf{q})\big| \ \le \ C_{\mathcal{E}}\, \|\mathbf{p}\|_{\mathbf{Q}} \|\mathbf{q}\|_{\mathbf{Q}}, \quad \big|\mathcal{A}(\mathbf{p})(\mathbf{q})\big| \ \le \ C_{\mathcal{A}}\, \|\mathbf{p}\|_{\mathbf{Q}} \|\mathbf{q}\|_{\mathbf{Q}}, \quad \big|\mathcal{B}(\mathbf{q})(\mathbf{s})\big| \ \le \ C_{\mathcal{B}}\, \|\mathbf{q}\|_{\mathbf{Q}} \|\mathbf{s}\|_{\mathbf{S}}, \tag{3.19}
$$

where the constant $C_{\mathcal{E}} > 0$ depends on s_0, α_p and $a_{\max}$, whereas $C_{\mathcal{A}}$ and $C_{\mathcal{B}}$ are positive constants depending on μ, $\mathbf{K}$, ρ, $\alpha_{\mathtt{BJS}}$, κ_1 and κ_2. The operator $\mathcal{K}_{\mathbf{w}_f}$ is linear and continuous:

$$
\big|\mathcal{K}_{\mathbf{w}_f}(\mathbf{p})(\mathbf{q})\big| \ \le \ C_{\mathcal{K}}\, \|\mathbf{w}_f\|_{\mathbf{V}_f} \|\mathbf{p}\|_{\mathbf{Q}} \|\mathbf{q}\|_{\mathbf{Q}}, \tag{3.20}
$$

where

$$
C_{\mathcal{K}} := \rho \left(\frac{1+\kappa_2}{2\,\mu} \|\mathbf{i}_c\|^2 + \|\mathbf{i}_\Gamma\|^2 \|\gamma_0\| \right). \tag{3.21}
$$

The linear functionals $\mathbf{F} \in \mathbf{Q}'$ and $\mathbf{G} \in \mathbf{S}'$ are continuous:

$$\left|\mathbf{F}(\mathbf{q})\right| \le C_{\mathbf{F}} \|\mathbf{q}\|_{\mathbf{Q}}, \quad \left|\mathbf{G}(\mathbf{s})\right| \le C_{\mathbf{G}} \|\mathbf{s}\|_{\mathbf{S}}, \tag{3.22}$$

with $C_{\mathbf{F}} = \left(\|q_p\|^2_{\mathrm{L}^2(\Omega_p)} + (1+\kappa_1^2)\|\mathbf{f}_f\|^2_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_f)} \right)^{1/2}$ and $C_{\mathbf{G}} = \|\mathbf{f}_p\|_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_p)}$.

Proof. We first note that

$$\|\mathbf{e}(\mathbf{v}_f)\|_{\mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_f)} \le \|\mathbf{v}_f\|_{\mathbf{V}_f} \quad \text{and} \quad \|\boldsymbol{\gamma}_f(\mathbf{v}_f)\|_{\mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_f)} \le \|\mathbf{v}_f\|_{\mathbf{V}_f} \quad \forall\, \mathbf{v}_f \in \mathbf{H}^1(\Omega_f). \tag{3.23}$$

We recall that the operators and functionals are defined in (3.18), with the associated bilinear forms defined in (3.14) and (3.15). The continuity of $\mathcal{E}$ follows from (2.6). The continuity of $\mathcal{A}$ follows from (2.9), (3.23), (3.10), (3.11) and (3.2). The continuity of $\mathcal{B}$ follows from (3.12) and (3.1). For the continuity of $\mathcal{K}_{\mathbf{w}_f}$ for a given $\mathbf{w}_f \in \mathbf{V}_f$, using (3.8)–(3.9) and (3.23), we deduce that

$$\left|\mathcal{K}_{\mathbf{w}_f}(\mathbf{p})(\mathbf{q})\right| \le C_{\mathcal{K}} \|\mathbf{w}_f\|_{\mathbf{V}_f} \|\mathbf{u}_f\|_{\mathbf{V}_f} \|(\mathbf{R}_f, \mathbf{v}_f)\| \le C_{\mathcal{K}} \|\mathbf{w}_f\|_{\mathbf{V}_f} \|\mathbf{p}\|_{\mathbf{Q}} \|\mathbf{q}\|_{\mathbf{Q}},$$

with $C_{\mathcal{K}}$ defined in (3.21), where

$$\|(\mathbf{R}_f, \mathbf{v}_f)\|^2 := \|\mathbf{R}_f\|^2_{\mathbb{X}_f} + \|\mathbf{v}_f\|^2_{\mathbf{V}_f}.$$

Finally, the continuity of $\mathbf{F}$ and $\mathbf{G}$ (3.22) follows easily from their definitions. □

In the sequel, we make use of the Korn inequality: there exists a positive constant C_{Ko} such that

$$C_{\mathrm{Ko}} \|\mathbf{v}_f\|^2_{\mathbf{V}_f} \le \|\mathbf{e}(\mathbf{v}_f)\|^2_{\mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_f)} \quad \forall\, \mathbf{v}_f \in \mathbf{V}_f, \tag{3.24}$$

as well as the following well-known estimates: there exist positive constants $c_1(\Omega_f)$ and $c_2(\Omega_f)$, such that (see, Brezzi & Fortin, 1991, Proposition IV.3.1, and Gatica, 2014, Lemma 2.5, respectively)

$$c_1(\Omega_f)\, \|\mathbf{R}_{f,0}\|^2_{\mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_f)} \le \|\mathbf{R}_f^{\mathrm{d}}\|^2_{\mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_f)} + \|\mathbf{div}(\mathbf{R}_f)\|^2_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_f)} \quad \forall\, \mathbf{R}_f = \mathbf{R}_{f,0} + \ell\, \mathbf{I} \in \mathbb{H}(\mathbf{div};\Omega_f) \tag{3.25}$$

and

$$c_2(\Omega_f)\, \|\mathbf{R}_f\|^2_{\mathbb{X}_f} \le \|\mathbf{R}_{f,0}\|^2_{\mathbb{X}_f} \quad \forall\, \mathbf{R}_f = \mathbf{R}_{f,0} + \ell\, \mathbf{I} \in \mathbb{X}_f, \tag{3.26}$$

where $\mathbf{R}_{f,0} \in \mathbb{H}_0(\mathbf{div};\Omega_f) := \left\{ \mathbf{R}_f \in \mathbb{H}(\mathbf{div};\Omega_f) : \quad (\mathrm{tr}(\mathbf{R}_f), 1)_{\Omega_f} = 0 \right\}$ and $\ell \in \mathrm{R}$. We emphasize that (3.26) holds since each $\mathbf{R}_f \in \mathbb{X}_f$ satisfies the boundary condition $\mathbf{R}_f \mathbf{n}_f = \mathbf{0}$ on Γ_f^{N} with $|\Gamma_f^{\mathrm{N}}| > 0$.

Next, we present a lemma that establishes positivity bounds for the operators $\mathcal{A} + \mathcal{K}_{\mathbf{w}_f}$ and $\mathcal{E}$. For any $r > 0$, let $\mathbf{W}_r$ be the closed ball defined by

$$\mathbf{W}_r := \left\{ \mathbf{w}_f \in \mathbf{V}_f : \quad \|\mathbf{w}_f\|_{\mathbf{V}_f} \le r \right\}. \tag{3.27}$$

LEMMA 3.3 Assume that $\kappa_1 \in (0,+\infty)$ and $\kappa_2 \in (0,4\mu)$, and let $\mathbf{w}_f \in \mathbf{W}_r$ with $r \in (0,r_0)$ and

$$r_0 := \frac{\alpha_f}{2C_{\mathcal{K}}}, \tag{3.28}$$

where $C_{\mathcal{K}}$ is defined in (3.21) and α_f is defined in (3.31) below. Then, $\mathcal{E}$ and $\mathcal{A}+\mathcal{K}_{\mathbf{w}_f}$ are monotone. Moreover, there exists a constant $\alpha_{\mathcal{AK}} > 0$ depending on $\mu, \mathbf{K}, \alpha_{\mathrm{BJS}}, C_{\mathrm{Ko}}, c_1(\Omega_f)$ and $c_2(\Omega_f)$, such that

$$\mathcal{E}(\mathbf{q})(\mathbf{q}) \;=\; s_0\|w_p\|^2_{\mathrm{L}^2(\Omega_p)} + \|A^{1/2}(\boldsymbol{\tau}_p + \alpha_p\, w_p\,\mathbf{I})\|^2_{\mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_p)} \quad \forall\,\mathbf{q}\in\mathbf{Q}, \tag{3.29}$$

and

$$(\mathcal{A}+\mathcal{K}_{\mathbf{w}_f})(\mathbf{q})(\mathbf{q}) \;\geq\; \alpha_{\mathcal{AK}}\left(\|\mathbf{v}_p\|^2_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_p)} + \|(\mathbf{R}_f,\mathbf{v}_f)\|^2 + |\mathbf{v}_f - \boldsymbol{\phi}|^2_{\mathrm{BJS}}\right) \quad \forall\,\mathbf{q}\in\mathbf{Q}. \tag{3.30}$$

Proof. First, (3.29) follows in a straightforward way from the definition of the operator $\mathcal{E}$ (cf. (3.18a), (3.14a)). In addition, using (3.29) and the fact that $\mathcal{E}$ is linear, the monotonicity property is obtained. In turn, from the definition of a_f (cf. (3.14b)), using Young's inequality and (3.23), and simple algebraic computations, we find that

$$a_f(\mathbf{R}_f,\mathbf{v}_f;\mathbf{R}_f,\mathbf{v}_f) \;\geq\; \frac{1}{2\,\mu}\left(1-\frac{\kappa_2}{4\,\mu}\right)\|\mathbf{R}_f^{\mathrm{d}}\|^2_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_f)} + \kappa_1\,\|\mathbf{div}(\mathbf{R}_f)\|^2_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_f)} + \frac{\kappa_2}{2}\,\|\mathbf{e}(\mathbf{v}_f)\|^2_{\mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_f)}$$

for all $(\mathbf{R}_f,\mathbf{v}_f) \in \mathbb{X}_f \times \mathbf{V}_f$. Then, assuming the stipulated ranges on κ_1 and κ_2, and applying inequalities (3.25) and (3.26), we can define the positive constants

$$\alpha_0 := \min\left\{\frac{1}{2\,\mu}\left(1-\frac{\kappa_2}{4\,\mu}\right), \frac{\kappa_1}{2}\right\}, \quad \alpha_1 := c_2(\Omega_f)\,\min\left\{c_1(\Omega_f)\,\alpha_0, \frac{\kappa_1}{2}\right\}, \quad \alpha_f := \min\left\{\alpha_1, \frac{\kappa_2}{2}\,C_{\mathrm{Ko}}\right\}, \tag{3.31}$$

which, together with the Korn inequality (3.24), allows us to conclude

$$a_f(\mathbf{R}_f,\mathbf{v}_f;\mathbf{R}_f,\mathbf{v}_f) \;\geq\; \alpha_1\,\|\mathbf{R}_f\|^2_{\mathbb{X}_f} + \frac{\kappa_2}{2}\,C_{\mathrm{Ko}}\,\|\mathbf{v}_f\|^2_{\mathbf{V}_f} \;\geq\; \alpha_f\,\|(\mathbf{R}_f,\mathbf{v}_f)\|^2. \tag{3.32}$$

Next, combining (3.32) with (3.20) and the assumption $\|\mathbf{w}_f\|_{\mathbf{V}_f} \leq r$, with $r \in (0,r_0)$ defined by (3.28), we deduce that

$$a_f(\mathbf{R}_f,\mathbf{v}_f;\mathbf{R}_f,\mathbf{v}_f) + \kappa_{\mathbf{w}_f}(\mathbf{R}_f,\mathbf{v}_f;\mathbf{R}_f,\mathbf{v}_f) \;\geq\; \big(\alpha_f \;-\; C_{\mathcal{K}}\,\|\mathbf{w}_f\|_{\mathbf{V}_f}\big)\|(\mathbf{R}_f,\mathbf{v}_f)\|^2 \;\geq\; \frac{\alpha_f}{2}\,\|(\mathbf{R}_f,\mathbf{v}_f)\|^2. \tag{3.33}$$

Finally, from the definition of the bilinear forms a_p and a_{BJS} (cf. (3.14a), (3.15a)), the estimate (2.9) and simple computations, we obtain

$$a_p(\mathbf{v}_p,\mathbf{v}_p) \;\geq\; \mu\,k_{\max}^{-1}\|\mathbf{v}_p\|^2_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_p)}, \quad \text{and}$$

$$a_{\mathrm{BJS}}(\mathbf{v}_f,\boldsymbol{\phi};\mathbf{v}_f,\boldsymbol{\phi}) \;=\; \mu\,\alpha_{BJS}\sum_{j=1}^{n-1}\left\langle\sqrt{\mathbf{K}_j^{-1}}(\mathbf{v}_f-\boldsymbol{\phi})\cdot\mathbf{t}_{f,j}, (\mathbf{v}_f-\boldsymbol{\phi})\cdot\mathbf{t}_{f,j}\right\rangle_{\Gamma_{fp}} \;\geq\; c_{\mathrm{BJS}}\,|\mathbf{v}_f-\boldsymbol{\phi}|^2_{\mathrm{BJS}}, \tag{3.34}$$

where, $|\mathbf{v}_f - \boldsymbol{\phi}|^2_{\mathtt{BJS}} := \sum_{j=1}^{n-1} \|(\mathbf{v}_f - \boldsymbol{\phi}) \cdot \mathbf{t}_{f,j}\|^2_{\mathrm{L}^2(\Gamma_{fp})}$ for all $(\mathbf{v}_f, \boldsymbol{\phi}) \in \mathbf{V}_f \times \boldsymbol{\Lambda}_s$, and $c_{\mathtt{BJS}}$ is a positive constant that only depends on μ, $\alpha_{\mathtt{BJS}}$ and $\mathbf{K}$. The monotonicity of $\mathcal{A} + \mathcal{K}_{\mathbf{w}_f}$ and (3.30) follow from the fact that the forms $a_f, \kappa_{\mathbf{w}_f}, a_p$ and $a_{\mathtt{BJS}}$ are linear, and the estimates (3.33) and (3.34). □

REMARK 3.4 In the computations, we choose a value of κ_2 in the middle of its admissible range $(0, 4\mu)$: $\kappa_2 = 2\mu$, which results in all constants defined in (3.31) being bounded strictly away from zero. We further set $\kappa_1 = \frac{1}{2\mu}$, which maximizes α_0 and gives $\alpha_1 = \mathcal{O}(\frac{1}{\mu})$, providing strong control on $\|\mathbf{T}_f\|_{\mathbb{X}_f}$ in the regime of small viscosity.

Next, we provide inf-sup conditions for some operators involved in (3.16), which will be used later on to derive stability bounds for the solution of (3.16).

LEMMA 3.5 There exist constants $\beta_1, \beta_2 > 0$ such that for all $(\mathbf{v}_s, \boldsymbol{\chi}_p, \boldsymbol{\phi}) \in \mathbf{V}_s \times \mathbb{Q}_p \times \boldsymbol{\Lambda}_s$,

$$\beta_1 \left(\|\mathbf{v}_s\|_{\mathbf{V}_s} + \|\boldsymbol{\chi}_p\|_{\mathbb{Q}_p} + \|\boldsymbol{\phi}\|_{\boldsymbol{\Lambda}_s}\right) \le \sup_{\mathbf{0}\neq\boldsymbol{\tau}_p\in\mathbb{X}_p} \frac{b_s(\boldsymbol{\tau}_p, \mathbf{v}_s) + b_{sk}(\boldsymbol{\tau}_p, \boldsymbol{\chi}_p) + b_{\mathbf{n}_p}(\boldsymbol{\tau}_p, \boldsymbol{\phi})}{\|\boldsymbol{\tau}_p\|_{\mathbb{X}_p}}, \tag{3.35}$$

and for all $(w_p, \xi) \in \mathrm{W}_p \times \Lambda_p$,

$$\beta_2 \left(\|w_p\|_{\mathrm{W}_p} + \|\xi\|_{\Lambda_p}\right) \le \sup_{\mathbf{0}\neq\mathbf{v}_p\in\mathbf{V}_p} \frac{b_p(\mathbf{v}_p, w_p) + b_\Gamma(\mathbf{v}_p, \mathbf{0}, \mathbf{0}; \xi)}{\|\mathbf{v}_p\|_{\mathbf{V}_p}}. \tag{3.36}$$

Proof. The proof of (3.35) follows from similar arguments to Gatica (2014, eq. (2.59), Section 2.4.3.2) for the elasticity problem with mixed boundary conditions, whereas (3.36) follows from a slight modification of Ervin *et al.* (2009, Lemmas 3.1 and 3.2) to account for $|\Gamma_p^{\mathrm{D}}| > 0$. □

4. Well-posedness of the model

In this section, we establish the well-posedness of (3.17) (equivalently (3.16)).

4.1 *Preliminaries*

We begin by recalling the following key result to establish the existence of a solution to (3.17) (see Showalter, 1997, Theorem IV.6.1(b), for details). In what follows, an operator A from a real vector space E to its algebraic dual E' is symmetric and monotone if, respectively,

$$A(x)(y) = A(y)(x) \quad \text{and} \quad \big(A(x) - A(y)\big)(x - y) \ge 0 \quad \forall\, x, y \in E.$$

In addition, $Rg(A)$ denotes the range of A.

THEOREM 4.1 Let the linear, symmetric and monotone operator $\mathcal{N}$ be given from the real vector space E to its algebraic dual E', and let E'_b be the Hilbert space, which is the dual of E with the seminorm

$$|x|_b = \big(\mathcal{N}(x)(x)\big)^{1/2} \quad x \in E.$$

Let $\mathcal{M} \subset E \times E'_b$ be a relation with domain $\mathcal{D} = \Big\{x \in E \,:\, \mathcal{M}(x) \neq \emptyset\Big\}$.

Assume $\mathcal{M}$ is monotone and $Rg(\mathcal{N}+\mathcal{M}) = E_b'$. Then, for each $u_0 \in \mathcal{D}$ and for each $f \in \mathrm{W}^{1,1}(0,T;E_b')$, there is a solution u of

$$\frac{\mathrm{d}}{\mathrm{d}t}\big(\mathcal{N}(u(t))\big) + \mathcal{M}\big(u(t)\big) \ni f(t) \quad a.e.\ 0 < t < T, \tag{4.1}$$

with

$$\mathcal{N}(u) \in \mathrm{W}^{1,\infty}(0,T;E_b'), \quad u(t) \in \mathcal{D}, \quad \text{for all } 0 \le t \le T, \quad \text{and} \quad \mathcal{N}(u(0)) = \mathcal{N}(u_0).$$

REMARK 4.2 The problem (3.17) is a degenerate evolution problem in a mixed form, which fits the structure of the problem (4.1) in Theorem 4.1. However, f is restricted to the space $\mathrm{W}^{1,1}(0,T;E_b')$ arising from $\mathcal{N}$. If we would like $u(t)$ in the theorem to represent all the variables in our case, we will have to restrict the data as $\mathbf{f}_f = \mathbf{0}$ and $\mathbf{f}_p = \mathbf{0}$. To avoid this restriction, we will reformulate the problem as a parabolic problem for $u = (\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p, p_p)$ as in Ambartsumyan *et al.* (2019a).

Let $E := \mathbb{X}_p \times \mathrm{W}_p$ and let $\mathcal{N} : E \to E'$ be defined as, (cf. (3.18a)),

$$\mathcal{N}(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p, p_p)(\boldsymbol{\tau}_p, w_p) := s_0(p_p, w_p)_{\Omega_p} + a_e(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p, p_p; \boldsymbol{\tau}_p, w_p). \tag{4.2}$$

From the definition of a_e (cf. (3.14a)) and the bounds on the operator A (cf. (2.6)), as well as the fact that $s_0 > 0$, it follows that the norm induced by $\mathcal{N}$ is equivalent to the L^2 norm $\big(\|\boldsymbol{\tau}_p\|^2_{\mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_p)} + \|w_p\|^2_{\mathrm{W}_p}\big)^{1/2}$, which implies that $E_b' = \mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_p) \times \mathrm{L}^2(\Omega_p) \subset \mathbb{X}_p' \times \mathrm{W}_p'$. Now, let us set $\mathbf{Q}_2' := \mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_p) \times \mathrm{L}^2(\Omega_p) \times \{\mathbf{0}\} \times \mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_f) \times \mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_f) \times \{\mathbf{0}\} \subset \mathbf{Q}'$. Next, similarly to Ambartsumyan *et al.* (2019a, Section 4.1), we consider the domain associated with the resolvent system of (3.17) (cf. (3.16)). For $r \in (0, r_0)$ with r_0 given in (3.28), define

$\mathcal{D} := \Big\{(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p, p_p) \in \mathbb{X}_p \times \mathrm{W}_p$: for given $(\mathbf{f}_f, \mathbf{f}_p) \in \mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_f) \times \mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_p)$, there exist $((\mathbf{u}_p, \mathbf{T}_f, \mathbf{u}_f, \boldsymbol{\theta}), (\lambda, \mathbf{u}_s, \boldsymbol{\gamma}_p)) \in (\mathbf{V}_p \times \mathbb{X}_f \times \mathbf{V}_f \times \boldsymbol{\Lambda}_s) \times \mathbf{S}$ with $\mathbf{u}_f \in \mathbf{W}_r$, such that

$$\begin{aligned}
&s_0\,(p_p, w_p)_{\Omega_p} + a_e(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p, p_p; \boldsymbol{\tau}_p, w_p) + a_p(\mathbf{u}_p, \mathbf{v}_p) + a_f(\mathbf{T}_f, \mathbf{u}_f; \mathbf{R}_f, \mathbf{v}_f) + \kappa_{\mathbf{u}_f}(\mathbf{T}_f, \mathbf{u}_f; \mathbf{R}_f, \mathbf{v}_f)\\
&\quad + a_{\mathrm{BJS}}(\mathbf{u}_f, \boldsymbol{\theta}; \mathbf{v}_f, \boldsymbol{\phi}) + b_p(p_p, \mathbf{v}_p) - b_p(w_p, \mathbf{u}_p) + b_{\mathbf{n}_p}(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p, \boldsymbol{\phi}) - b_{\mathbf{n}_p}(\boldsymbol{\tau}_p, \boldsymbol{\theta})\\
&\quad + b_s(\mathbf{u}_s, \boldsymbol{\tau}_p) + b_{\mathrm{sk}}(\boldsymbol{\gamma}_p, \boldsymbol{\tau}_p) + b_\Gamma(\mathbf{v}_p, \mathbf{v}_f, \boldsymbol{\phi}; \lambda) = (\widehat{\mathbf{f}}_p, \boldsymbol{\tau}_p)_{\Omega_p} + (\widehat{q}_p, w_p)_{\Omega_p} + (\mathbf{f}_f, \mathbf{v}_f - \kappa_1\,\mathbf{div}(\mathbf{R}_f))_{\Omega_f},\\
&\quad - b_s(\mathbf{v}_s, \boldsymbol{\sigma}_p) - b_{\mathrm{sk}}(\boldsymbol{\chi}_p, \boldsymbol{\sigma}_p) - b_\Gamma(\mathbf{u}_p, \mathbf{u}_f, \boldsymbol{\theta}; \xi) = (\mathbf{f}_p, \mathbf{v}_s)_{\Omega_p},
\end{aligned} \tag{4.3}$$

for all $(\mathbf{q}, \mathbf{s}) \in \mathbf{Q} \times \mathbf{S}$ and for some $(\widehat{\mathbf{f}}_p, \widehat{q}_p) \in E_b'$, satisfying

$$\|\widehat{\mathbf{f}}_p\|_{\mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_p)} + \|\widehat{q}_p\|_{\mathrm{L}^2(\Omega_p)} \le \widehat{C}_{ep}\,\Big(\|\mathbf{f}_f\|_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_f)} + \|\mathbf{f}_p\|_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_p)}\Big) \tag{4.4}$$

with $\widehat{C}_{ep}$ a fixed positive constant$\Big\}$.

The constant $\widehat{C}_{ep}$ is determined in the construction of the initial data, which is required to be in the domain $\mathcal{D}$, cf. (4.34) and (4.46) below.

Note that the resolvent system (4.3) can be written in an operator form as

$$(\mathcal{E}+\mathcal{A}+\mathcal{K}_{\mathbf{u}_f})(\mathbf{p})+\mathcal{B}'(\mathbf{r}) = \widehat{\mathbf{F}} \quad \text{in } \mathbf{Q}_2',$$
$$-\mathcal{B}(\mathbf{p}) = \mathbf{G} \quad \text{in } \mathbf{S}', \tag{4.5}$$

where $\widehat{\mathbf{F}} \in \mathbf{Q}_2' \subset \mathbf{Q}'$ is the functional on the right-hand side of (4.3), that is,

$$\widehat{\mathbf{F}}(\mathbf{q}) = (\widehat{\mathbf{f}}_p, \boldsymbol{\tau}_p)_{\Omega_p} + (\widehat{q}_p, w_p)_{\Omega_p} + (\mathbf{f}_f, \mathbf{v}_f - \kappa_1 \, \mathbf{div}(\mathbf{R}_f))_{\Omega_f} \quad \forall\, \mathbf{q} \in \mathbf{Q}, \tag{4.6}$$

which, thanks to (4.4), is bounded by

$$\left|\widehat{\mathbf{F}}(\mathbf{q})\right| \le \left((1+\kappa_1^2+2\widehat{C}_{ep}^2)\|\mathbf{f}_f\|^2_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_f)} + 2\widehat{C}_{ep}^2\|\mathbf{f}_p\|^2_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_p)}\right)^{1/2} \|\mathbf{q}\|_{\mathbf{Q}}. \tag{4.7}$$

Note that there may be more than one $(\widehat{\mathbf{f}}_p, \widehat{q}_p) \in E_b'$ that generate the same $(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p, p_p) \in \mathcal{D}$. In view of this, we introduce the multivalued operator $\mathcal{M}(\cdot)$ with domain $\mathcal{D}$ defined by

$$\mathcal{M}(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p, p_p) := \Big\{(\widehat{\mathbf{f}}_p, \widehat{q}_p) - \mathcal{N}(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p, p_p) : \ (\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p, p_p) \ \text{satisfy (4.3) for } (\widehat{\mathbf{f}}_p, \widehat{q}_p) \in E_b' \text{ satisfying (4.4)}\Big\}, \tag{4.8}$$

where $\mathcal{N}$ is the operator defined in (4.2). We observe that the relation $\mathcal{M} \subset E \times E_b'$ is associated with the domain $\mathcal{D}$ in the sense that $[\mathbf{v}, \mathbf{f}] \in \mathcal{M}$ if $\mathbf{v} \in \mathcal{D}$ and $\mathbf{f} \in \mathcal{M}(\mathbf{v})$.

Next, we establish a connection between (3.16) and the following parabolic problem: given

$$(h_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p}, h_{p_p}) \in \mathrm{W}^{1,1}(0,T;\mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_p)) \times \mathrm{W}^{1,1}(0,T;\mathrm{L}^2(\Omega_p)),$$

find $(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p, p_p) : [0,T] \to \mathcal{D}$, satisfying

$$\frac{\mathrm{d}}{\mathrm{d}t}\mathcal{N}\begin{pmatrix}\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p(t)\\ p_p(t)\end{pmatrix} + \mathcal{M}\begin{pmatrix}\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p(t)\\ p_p(t)\end{pmatrix} \ni \begin{pmatrix}h_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p}(t)\\ h_{p_p}(t)\end{pmatrix} \quad a.e.\ t \in (0,T). \tag{4.9}$$

LEMMA 4.3 If $(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p, p_p) : [0,T] \to \mathcal{D}$ solves (4.9) for $(h_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p}, h_{p_p}) = (\mathbf{0}, q_p)$ with $q_p \in \mathrm{W}^{1,1}(0,T;\mathrm{L}^2(\Omega_p))$, then the associated solution to (4.3) also solves (3.16).

Proof. Let $(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p(t), p_p(t)) \in \mathcal{D}$ solve (4.9) for $(h_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p}, h_{p_p}) = (\mathbf{0}, q_p)$. Note that the resolvent system (4.3) from the definition of the domain $\mathcal{D}$ directly implies (3.16) when is tested with $\mathbf{q} = (\mathbf{0}, 0, \mathbf{v}_p, \mathbf{R}_f, \mathbf{v}_f, \boldsymbol{\phi})$ and $\mathbf{s} = (\xi, \mathbf{v}_s, \boldsymbol{\chi}_p)$. Thus, it remains to show (3.16) with $\mathbf{q} = (\boldsymbol{\tau}_p, w_p, \mathbf{0}, \mathbf{0}, \mathbf{0}, \mathbf{0})$ and $\mathbf{s} = \mathbf{0}$.

Since $(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p(t), p_p(t))$ solves (4.9) for $(h_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p}, h_{p_p}) = (\mathbf{0}, q_p)$, there exists $(\widehat{\mathbf{f}}_p, \widehat{q}_p) \in \mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_p) \times \mathrm{L}^2(\Omega_p)$ such that $(\widehat{\mathbf{f}}_p, \widehat{q}_p) - \mathcal{N}(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p, p_p) \in \mathcal{M}(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p, p_p)$ satisfies

$$\frac{\mathrm{d}}{\mathrm{d}t}\mathcal{N}\begin{pmatrix}\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p\\ p_p\end{pmatrix} + \begin{pmatrix}\widehat{\mathbf{f}}_p\\ \widehat{q}_p\end{pmatrix} - \mathcal{N}\begin{pmatrix}\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p\\ p_p\end{pmatrix} = \begin{pmatrix}\mathbf{0}\\ q_p\end{pmatrix},$$

which implies that for all $(\boldsymbol{\tau}_p, w_p) \in \mathbb{X}_p \times \mathrm{W}_p$, there holds

$$\frac{\mathrm{d}}{\mathrm{d}t}\mathcal{N}\begin{pmatrix}\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p\\ p_p\end{pmatrix}\begin{pmatrix}\boldsymbol{\tau}_p\\ w_p\end{pmatrix}+\left(\begin{pmatrix}\widehat{\mathbf{f}}_p\\ \widehat{q}_p\end{pmatrix}-\mathcal{N}\begin{pmatrix}\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p\\ p_p\end{pmatrix}\right)\begin{pmatrix}\boldsymbol{\tau}_p\\ w_p\end{pmatrix} = (q_p, w_p)_{\Omega_p}. \tag{4.10}$$

In turn, using the definition of $\mathcal{N}$ (cf. (4.2)) and testing the first equation of (4.3) with $\mathbf{q} = (\boldsymbol{\tau}_p, w_p, \mathbf{0}, \mathbf{0}, \mathbf{0}, \mathbf{0}) \in \mathbf{Q}$, we deduce that

$$\begin{aligned}\left(\begin{pmatrix}\widehat{\mathbf{f}}_p\\ \widehat{q}_p\end{pmatrix}-\mathcal{N}\begin{pmatrix}\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p\\ p_p\end{pmatrix}\right)\begin{pmatrix}\boldsymbol{\tau}_p\\ w_p\end{pmatrix} &= (\widehat{\mathbf{f}}_p, \boldsymbol{\tau}_p)_{\Omega_p} + (\widehat{q}_p, w_p)_{\Omega_p} - a_e(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p, p_p; \boldsymbol{\tau}_p, w_p) - (s_0 p_p, w_p)_{\Omega_p}\\ &= -b_p(\mathbf{u}_p, w_p) - b_{\mathbf{n}_p}(\boldsymbol{\tau}_p, \boldsymbol{\theta}) + b_s(\boldsymbol{\tau}_p, \mathbf{u}_s) + b_{\mathrm{sk}}(\boldsymbol{\gamma}_p, \boldsymbol{\tau}_p),\end{aligned}$$

which, combined with (4.10), yields

$$\begin{aligned}&a_e(\partial_t \boldsymbol{\sigma}_p, \partial_t p_p; \boldsymbol{\tau}_p, w_p) + (s_0\, \partial_t p_p, w_p)_{\Omega_p}\\ &\quad - b_p(\mathbf{u}_p, w_p) - b_{\mathbf{n}_p}(\boldsymbol{\tau}_p, \boldsymbol{\theta}) + b_s(\boldsymbol{\tau}_p, \mathbf{u}_s) + b_{\mathrm{sk}}(\boldsymbol{\gamma}_p, \boldsymbol{\tau}_p) = (q_p, w_p)_{\Omega_p} \quad \forall\, (\boldsymbol{\tau}_p, w_p) \in \mathbb{X}_p \times \mathrm{W}_p.\end{aligned}$$

Therefore, the first equation of (3.16) tested with $\mathbf{q} = (\boldsymbol{\tau}_p, w_p, \mathbf{0}, \mathbf{0}, \mathbf{0}, \mathbf{0})$ holds, completing the proof. □

4.2 *Existence and uniqueness of a solution of the reduced parabolic problem*

We will utilize Theorem 4.1 to show that the problem (4.9) has a solution, which will be used later on to prove the well-posedness of problem (3.17). We proceed as follows.
Step 1. Introduce a fixed-point operator $\mathcal{J}$ associated to problem (4.5) and derive a continuity bound.
Step 2. Prove that $\mathcal{J}$ is a contraction mapping and conclude that the domain $\mathcal{D}$ (cf. (4.3)) is nonempty.
Step 3. Show the solvability of the parabolic problem (4.9).

4.2.1 *Step 1: A fixed-point approach.* We begin the solvability analysis of (4.5) or equivalently that the domain $\mathcal{D}$ (cf. (4.3)) is nonempty by defining the operator $\mathcal{J} : \mathbf{V}_f \to \mathbf{V}_f$ as

$$\mathcal{J}(\mathbf{w}_f) := \mathbf{u}_f \quad \forall\, \mathbf{w}_f \in \mathbf{V}_f, \tag{4.11}$$

where $\mathbf{p} := (\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p, p_p, \mathbf{u}_p, \mathbf{T}_f, \mathbf{u}_f, \boldsymbol{\theta}) \in \mathbf{Q}$ is the first component of the unique solution (to be confirmed below) of the problem: find $(\mathbf{p}, \mathbf{r}) \in \mathbf{Q} \times \mathbf{S}$, such that

$$\begin{aligned}(\mathcal{E} + \mathcal{A} + \mathcal{K}_{\mathbf{w}_f})(\mathbf{p}) + \mathcal{B}'(\mathbf{r}) &= \widehat{\mathbf{F}} \quad \text{in} \quad \mathbf{Q}_2',\\ -\mathcal{B}(\mathbf{p}) &= \mathbf{G} \quad \text{in} \quad \mathbf{S}'.\end{aligned} \tag{4.12}$$

Thus, $(\mathbf{p}, \mathbf{r}) \in \mathbf{Q} \times \mathbf{S}$ is a solution of (4.3) if and only if $\mathbf{u}_f \in \mathbf{V}_f$ is a fixed-point of $\mathcal{J}$, that is,

$$\mathcal{J}(\mathbf{u}_f) = \mathbf{u}_f. \tag{4.13}$$

In what follows, we focus on proving that $\mathcal{J}$ possesses a unique fixed-point. We remark in advance that the definition of $\mathcal{J}$ will make sense only in the ball $\mathbf{W}_r$, cf. (3.27).

The solvability of (4.12) is established using a suitable regularization, adding some extra terms to (4.12) multiplied by an arbitrary $\epsilon > 0$ that provide coercivity for all unknowns, which yields a well-posed problem. Then, taking $\epsilon \to 0$, we recover (4.12). More precisely, let $R_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p} : \mathbb{X}_p \to \mathbb{X}_p'$, $R_{p_p} : \mathrm{W}_p \to \mathrm{W}_p'$, $R_{\mathbf{u}_p} : \mathbf{V}_p \to \mathbf{V}_p'$, $L_{\mathbf{u}_s} : \mathbf{V}_s \to \mathbf{V}_s'$ and $L_{\boldsymbol{\gamma}_p} : \mathbb{Q}_p \to \mathbb{Q}_p'$ be defined by:

$$R_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p}(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p)(\boldsymbol{\tau}_p) = r_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p}(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p, \boldsymbol{\tau}_p) := (\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p, \boldsymbol{\tau}_p)_{\Omega_p} + (\mathbf{div}(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p), \mathbf{div}(\boldsymbol{\tau}_p))_{\Omega_p},$$

$$R_{p_p}(p_p)(w_p) = r_{p_p}(p_p, w_p) := (p_p, w_p)_{\Omega_p}, \quad R_{\mathbf{u}_p}(\mathbf{u}_p)(\mathbf{v}_p) = r_{\mathbf{u}_p}(\mathbf{u}_p, \mathbf{v}_p) := (\mathrm{div}(\mathbf{u}_p), \mathrm{div}(\mathbf{v}_p))_{\Omega_p},$$

$$L_{\mathbf{u}_s}(\mathbf{u}_s)(\mathbf{v}_s) = l_{\mathbf{u}_s}(\mathbf{u}_s, \mathbf{v}_s) := (\mathbf{u}_s, \mathbf{v}_s)_{\Omega_p}, \quad L_{\boldsymbol{\gamma}_p}(\boldsymbol{\gamma}_p)(\boldsymbol{\chi}_p) = l_{\boldsymbol{\gamma}_p}(\boldsymbol{\gamma}_p, \boldsymbol{\chi}_p) := (\boldsymbol{\gamma}_p, \boldsymbol{\chi}_p)_{\Omega_p}.$$

The following operator properties follow immediately from the above definitions.

Lemma 4.4 The operators $R_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p}$, R_{p_p}, $L_{\mathbf{u}_s}$ and $L_{\boldsymbol{\gamma}_p}$ are bounded, continuous and coercive. In addition, $R_{\mathbf{u}_p}$ is bounded, continuous and monotone.

On the other hand, recalling from (3.3) the trace spaces Λ_p and $\boldsymbol{\Lambda}_s$, we define $L_\lambda : \Lambda_p \to \Lambda_p'$ as

$$L_\lambda(\lambda)(\xi) = l_\lambda(\lambda, \xi) := (\nabla\psi(\lambda), \nabla\psi(\xi))_{\Omega_p},$$

where $\psi(\lambda) \in \mathrm{H}^1(\Omega_p)$ is the weak solution of the auxiliary problem

$$-\mathrm{div}(\nabla\psi(\lambda)) = 0 \quad \text{in} \quad \Omega_p,$$
$$\psi(\lambda) = \lambda \quad \text{on} \quad \Gamma_{fp}, \quad \nabla\psi(\lambda)\cdot\mathbf{n}_p = 0 \quad \text{on} \quad \Gamma_p^{\mathrm{N}}, \quad \psi(\lambda) = 0 \quad \text{on} \quad \Gamma_p^{\mathrm{D}}.$$

It is shown in Ambartsumyan *et al.* (2019a) using elliptic regularity and the trace inequality that there exist positive constants c_1 and c_2 such that

$$c_1\,\|\psi(\lambda)\|_{\mathrm{H}^1(\Omega_p)} \leq \|\lambda\|_{\Lambda_p} \leq c_2\,\|\psi(\lambda)\|_{\mathrm{H}^1(\Omega_p)}. \tag{4.14}$$

Similarly, we define $R_{\boldsymbol{\theta}} : \boldsymbol{\Lambda}_s \to \boldsymbol{\Lambda}_s'$ as

$$R_{\boldsymbol{\theta}}(\boldsymbol{\theta})(\boldsymbol{\phi}) = r_{\boldsymbol{\theta}}(\boldsymbol{\theta}, \boldsymbol{\phi}) := (\nabla\boldsymbol{\varphi}(\boldsymbol{\theta}), \nabla\boldsymbol{\varphi}(\boldsymbol{\phi}))_{\Omega_p},$$

where $\boldsymbol{\varphi}(\boldsymbol{\theta}) \in \mathbf{H}^1(\Omega_p)$ is the weak solution of

$$-\mathbf{div}\,(\nabla\boldsymbol{\varphi}(\boldsymbol{\theta})) = \mathbf{0} \quad \text{in} \quad \Omega_p,$$
$$\boldsymbol{\varphi}(\boldsymbol{\theta}) = \boldsymbol{\theta} \quad \text{on} \quad \Gamma_{fp}, \quad \nabla\boldsymbol{\varphi}(\boldsymbol{\theta})\cdot\mathbf{n}_p = 0 \quad \text{on} \quad \tilde{\Gamma}_p^{\mathrm{N}}, \quad \boldsymbol{\varphi}(\boldsymbol{\theta}) = \mathbf{0} \quad \text{on} \quad \tilde{\Gamma}_p^{\mathrm{D}}.$$

Similarly to (4.14), there exist positive constants $\tilde{c}_1$ and $\tilde{c}_2$ such that

$$\tilde{c}_1\,\|\boldsymbol{\varphi}(\boldsymbol{\theta})\|_{\mathbf{H}^1(\Omega_p)} \leq \|\boldsymbol{\theta}\|_{\boldsymbol{\Lambda}_s} \leq \tilde{c}_2\,\|\boldsymbol{\varphi}(\boldsymbol{\theta})\|_{\mathbf{H}^1(\Omega_p)}. \tag{4.15}$$

LEMMA 4.5 The operators L_λ and $R_{\boldsymbol{\theta}}$ are bounded, continuous, coercive and monotone.

Proof. The assertion follows from the definition of the operators $L_\lambda, R_{\boldsymbol{\theta}}$ and the equivalence of norms statements (4.14) and (4.15). In particular, there exist positive constants c_Γ, C_Γ, $\tilde{c}_\Gamma$ and $\tilde{C}_\Gamma$ such that

$$L_\lambda(\lambda)(\xi) \leq C_\Gamma \|\lambda\|_{\Lambda_p}\|\xi\|_{\Lambda_p}, \quad L_\lambda(\lambda)(\lambda) \geq c_\Gamma \|\lambda\|^2_{\Lambda_p},$$

$$R_{\boldsymbol{\theta}}(\boldsymbol{\theta})(\boldsymbol{\phi}) \leq \tilde{C}_\Gamma \|\boldsymbol{\theta}\|_{\boldsymbol{\Lambda}_s}\|\boldsymbol{\phi}\|_{\boldsymbol{\Lambda}_s}, \quad R_{\boldsymbol{\theta}}(\boldsymbol{\theta})(\boldsymbol{\phi}) \geq \tilde{c}_\Gamma \|\boldsymbol{\theta}\|^2_{\boldsymbol{\Lambda}_s},$$

for all $\lambda, \xi \in \Lambda_p$ and for all $\boldsymbol{\theta}, \boldsymbol{\phi} \in \boldsymbol{\Lambda}_s$. □

According to the above, we define the operators $\mathcal{R} : \mathbf{Q} \to \mathbf{Q}'$ and $\mathcal{L} : \mathbf{S} \to \mathbf{S}'$ as

$$\mathcal{R}(\mathbf{p})(\mathbf{q}) := R_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p}(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p)(\boldsymbol{\tau}_p) + R_{p_p}(p_p)(w_p) + R_{\mathbf{u}_p}(\mathbf{u}_p)(\mathbf{v}_p) + R_{\boldsymbol{\theta}}(\boldsymbol{\theta})(\boldsymbol{\phi}),$$
$$\mathcal{L}(\mathbf{r})(\mathbf{s}) := L_\lambda(\lambda)(\xi) + L_{\mathbf{u}_s}(\mathbf{u}_s)(\mathbf{v}_s) + L_{\boldsymbol{\gamma}_p}(\boldsymbol{\gamma}_p)(\boldsymbol{\chi}_p).$$

THEOREM 4.6 Let $r \in (0, r_0)$, with r_0 given by (3.28), and let $\mathbf{f}_f \in \mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_f)$ and $\mathbf{f}_p \in \mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_p)$. Assume that the conditions in Lemma 3.3 are satisfied. Then for each $\mathbf{w}_f \in \mathbf{W}_r$ and for each $(\widehat{\mathbf{f}}_p, \widehat{q}_p)$ satisfying (4.4), there exists a unique solution of the resolvent system (4.12). Moreover, there exists a constant $C_{\mathcal{J}} > 0$, independent of $s_{0,\min}$, $\mathbf{w}_f$ and the data $\mathbf{f}_f$ and $\mathbf{f}_p$ such that

$$\|\mathcal{J}(\mathbf{w}_f)\|_{\mathbf{V}_f} \leq \|(\mathbf{p}, \mathbf{r})\|_{\mathbf{Q}\times\mathbf{S}} \leq C_{\mathcal{J}} \left(\|\mathbf{f}_f\|_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_f)} + \|\mathbf{f}_p\|_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_p)}\right). \tag{4.16}$$

Proof. Given $\mathbf{w}_f \in \mathbf{W}_r$ with $r \in (0, r_0)$ (cf. (3.28)), for each $0 < \epsilon \leq 1$, consider a regularization of (4.12): Find $\mathbf{p}_\epsilon = (\boldsymbol{\sigma}_{p,\epsilon}, p_{p,\epsilon}, \mathbf{u}_{p,\epsilon}, \mathbf{T}_{f,\epsilon}, \mathbf{u}_{f,\epsilon}, \boldsymbol{\theta}_\epsilon) \in \mathbf{Q}$ and $\mathbf{r}_\epsilon = (\lambda_\epsilon, \mathbf{u}_{s,\epsilon}, \boldsymbol{\gamma}_{p,\epsilon}) \in \mathbf{S}$, such that

$$\begin{aligned} (\epsilon\mathcal{R} + \mathcal{E} + \mathcal{A} + \mathcal{K}_{\mathbf{w}_f})(\mathbf{p}_\epsilon) + \mathcal{B}'(\mathbf{r}_\epsilon) &= \widehat{\mathbf{F}} \quad \text{in} \quad \mathbf{Q}_2', \\ -\mathcal{B}(\mathbf{p}_\epsilon) + \epsilon\mathcal{L}(\mathbf{r}_\epsilon) &= \mathbf{G} \quad \text{in} \quad \mathbf{S}'. \end{aligned} \tag{4.17}$$

Let $\Psi : \mathbf{Q} \times \mathbf{S} \to \mathbf{Q}' \times \mathbf{S}'$ be the operator induced by (4.17):

$$\Psi \begin{pmatrix} \mathbf{q} \\ \mathbf{s} \end{pmatrix} = \begin{pmatrix} \epsilon\mathcal{R} + \mathcal{E} + \mathcal{A} + \mathcal{K}_{\mathbf{w}_f} & \mathcal{B}' \\ -\mathcal{B} & \epsilon\mathcal{L} \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} \mathbf{q} \\ \mathbf{s} \end{pmatrix}.$$

The continuity bounds in Lemmas 3.2, 4.4 and 4.5 imply that Ψ is bounded and continuous. In turn, we note that

$$\Psi \begin{pmatrix} \mathbf{p} \\ \mathbf{r} \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} \mathbf{q} \\ \mathbf{s} \end{pmatrix} = \left(\epsilon\mathcal{R} + \mathcal{E} + \mathcal{A} + \mathcal{K}_{\mathbf{w}_f}\right)(\mathbf{p})(\mathbf{q}) + \mathcal{B}'(\mathbf{r})(\mathbf{q}) - \mathcal{B}(\mathbf{p})(\mathbf{s}) + \epsilon\mathcal{L}(\mathbf{r})(\mathbf{s}).$$

The positivity bounds in Lemmas 3.3, 4.4 and 4.5 imply

$$\Psi\begin{pmatrix}\mathbf{q}\\ \mathbf{s}\end{pmatrix}\begin{pmatrix}\mathbf{q}\\ \mathbf{s}\end{pmatrix} = \left(\epsilon\mathcal{R} + \mathcal{E} + \mathcal{A} + \mathcal{K}_{\mathbf{w}_f}\right)(\mathbf{q})(\mathbf{q}) + \epsilon\mathcal{L}(\mathbf{s})(\mathbf{s})$$
$$= \epsilon r_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p}(\boldsymbol{\tau}_p,\boldsymbol{\tau}_p) + \epsilon r_{p_p}(w_p,w_p) + \epsilon r_{\mathbf{u}_p}(\mathbf{v}_p,\mathbf{v}_p) + \epsilon r_{\boldsymbol{\theta}}(\boldsymbol{\phi},\boldsymbol{\phi}) + (s_0 w_p, w_p) + a_e(\boldsymbol{\tau}_p, w_p;\boldsymbol{\tau}_p, w_p)$$
$$+ a_p(\mathbf{v}_p,\mathbf{v}_p) + a_f(\mathbf{R}_f,\mathbf{v}_f;\mathbf{R}_f,\mathbf{v}_f) + \kappa_{\mathbf{w}_f}(\mathbf{R}_f,\mathbf{v}_f;\mathbf{R}_f,\mathbf{v}_f) + a_{\mathrm{BJS}}(\mathbf{v}_f,\boldsymbol{\phi};\mathbf{v}_f,\boldsymbol{\phi})$$
$$+ \epsilon l_\lambda(\xi,\xi) + \epsilon l_{\mathbf{u}_s}(\mathbf{v}_s,\mathbf{v}_s) + \epsilon l_{\boldsymbol{\gamma}_p}(\boldsymbol{\chi}_p,\boldsymbol{\chi}_p)$$
$$\geq C\Big(\epsilon\|\boldsymbol{\tau}_p\|^2_{\mathbb{X}_p} + \epsilon\|w_p\|^2_{\mathrm{W}_p} + \epsilon\|\mathrm{div}(\mathbf{v}_p)\|^2_{\mathrm{L}^2(\Omega_p)} + \epsilon\|\boldsymbol{\phi}\|^2_{\boldsymbol{\Lambda}_s} + s_0\|w_p\|^2_{\mathrm{W}_p} + \|A^{1/2}(\boldsymbol{\tau}_p + \alpha_p w_p\mathbf{I})\|^2_{\mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_p)}$$
$$+ \|\mathbf{v}_p\|^2_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_p)} + \|\mathbf{R}_f\|^2_{\mathbb{X}_f} + \|\mathbf{v}_f\|^2_{\mathbf{V}_f} + |\mathbf{v}_f - \boldsymbol{\phi}|^2_{\mathrm{BJS}} + \epsilon\|\xi\|^2_{\Lambda_p} + \epsilon\|\mathbf{v}_s\|^2_{\mathbf{V}_s} + \epsilon\|\boldsymbol{\chi}_p\|^2_{\mathbb{Q}_p}\Big), \tag{4.18}$$

which implies that Ψ is coercive. Thus, the Lax–Milgram theorem implies the existence of a unique solution $(\mathbf{p}_\epsilon,\mathbf{r}_\epsilon)\in\mathbf{Q}\times\mathbf{S}$ of (4.17).

On the other hand, using (4.17) and (4.18), and the Cauchy–Schwarz inequality, we deduce that

$$\epsilon\|\boldsymbol{\sigma}_{p,\epsilon}\|^2_{\mathbb{X}_p} + \epsilon\|p_{p,\epsilon}\|^2_{\mathrm{W}_p} + \epsilon\|\mathrm{div}(\mathbf{u}_{p,\epsilon})\|^2_{\mathrm{L}^2(\Omega_p)} + \epsilon\|\boldsymbol{\theta}_\epsilon\|^2_{\boldsymbol{\Lambda}_s} + s_0\|p_{p,\epsilon}\|^2_{\mathrm{W}_p} + \|A^{1/2}(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_{p,\epsilon} + \alpha_p p_{p,\epsilon}\mathbf{I})\|^2_{\mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_p)}$$
$$+ \|\mathbf{u}_{p,\epsilon}\|^2_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_p)} + \|\mathbf{T}_{f,\epsilon}\|^2_{\mathbb{X}_f} + \|\mathbf{u}_{f,\epsilon}\|^2_{\mathbf{V}_f} + |\mathbf{u}_{f,\epsilon} - \boldsymbol{\theta}_\epsilon|^2_{\mathrm{BJS}} + \epsilon\|\lambda_\epsilon\|^2_{\Lambda_p} + \epsilon\|\mathbf{u}_{s,\epsilon}\|^2_{\mathbf{V}_s} + \epsilon\|\boldsymbol{\gamma}_{p,\epsilon}\|^2_{\mathbb{Q}_p}$$
$$\leq C\Big(\|\mathbf{f}_f\|_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_f)}\|(\mathbf{T}_{f,\epsilon},\mathbf{u}_{f,\epsilon})\| + \|\widehat{\mathbf{f}}_p\|_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_p)}\|\boldsymbol{\sigma}_{p,\epsilon}\|_{\mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_p)} + \|\widehat{q}_p\|_{\mathrm{L}^2(\Omega_p)}\|p_{p,\epsilon}\|_{\mathrm{W}_p} + \|\mathbf{f}_p\|_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_p)}\|\mathbf{u}_{s,\epsilon}\|_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_p)}\Big). \tag{4.19}$$

In addition, the inf-sup conditions (3.35) and (3.36) in Lemma 3.5, in combination with the first equation of (4.17), yield

$$\|\mathbf{u}_{s,\epsilon}\|_{\mathbf{V}_s} + \|\boldsymbol{\gamma}_{p,\epsilon}\|_{\mathbb{Q}_p} + \|\boldsymbol{\theta}_\epsilon\|_{\boldsymbol{\Lambda}_s} \leq C\left(\|A^{1/2}(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_{p,\epsilon} + \alpha_p p_{p,\epsilon}\mathbf{I})\|_{\mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_p)} + \epsilon\|\boldsymbol{\sigma}_{p,\epsilon}\|_{\mathbb{X}_p} + \|\widehat{\mathbf{f}}_p\|_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_p)}\right),$$
$$\|p_{p,\epsilon}\|_{\mathrm{W}_p} + \|\lambda_\epsilon\|_{\Lambda_p} \leq C\left(\|\mathbf{u}_{p,\epsilon}\|_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_p)} + \epsilon\|\mathrm{div}(\mathbf{u}_{p,\epsilon})\|_{\mathrm{L}^2(\Omega_p)}\right). \tag{4.20}$$

In turn, taking $\mathbf{v}_s = \mathbf{div}(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_{p,\epsilon})$ and $w_p = \mathrm{div}(\mathbf{u}_{p,\epsilon})$ in (4.17), we deduce that

$$\|\mathbf{div}(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_{p,\epsilon})\|_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_p)} \leq \epsilon\|\mathbf{u}_{s,\epsilon}\|_{\mathbf{V}_s} + \|\mathbf{f}_p\|_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_p)},$$
$$\|\mathrm{div}(\mathbf{u}_{p,\epsilon})\|_{\mathrm{L}^2(\Omega_p)} \leq C\left(\|A^{1/2}(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_{p,\epsilon} + \alpha_p p_{p,\epsilon}\mathbf{I})\|_{\mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_p)} + (s_0+\epsilon)\|p_{p,\epsilon}\|_{\mathrm{W}_p} + \|\widehat{q}_p\|_{\mathrm{L}^2(\Omega_p)}\right). \tag{4.21}$$

Next, combining (4.19) with (4.20) and (4.21), using Young's inequality, some algebraic computations and the estimate

$$\|\boldsymbol{\sigma}_{p,\epsilon}\|_{\mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_p)} \leq C\left(\|A^{1/2}(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_{p,\epsilon} + \alpha_p p_{p,\epsilon}\mathbf{I})\|_{\mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_p)} + \|p_{p,\epsilon}\|_{\mathrm{W}_p}\right), \tag{4.22}$$

which follows from (2.6) and the triangle inequality, we deduce that

$$\|\boldsymbol{\sigma}_{p,\epsilon}\|^2_{\mathbb{X}_p} + \|p_{p,\epsilon}\|^2_{\mathrm{W}_p} + \|\mathbf{u}_{p,\epsilon}\|^2_{\mathbf{V}_p} + \|\mathbf{T}_{f,\epsilon}\|^2_{\mathbb{X}_f} + \|\mathbf{u}_{f,\epsilon}\|^2_{\mathbf{V}_f} + |\mathbf{u}_{f,\epsilon} - \boldsymbol{\theta}_\epsilon|^2_{\mathrm{BJS}} + \|\boldsymbol{\theta}_\epsilon\|^2_{\boldsymbol{\Lambda}_s} + \|\lambda_\epsilon\|_{\Lambda_p}$$
$$+ \|\mathbf{u}_{s,\epsilon}\|^2_{\mathbf{V}_s} + \|\boldsymbol{\gamma}_{p,\epsilon}\|^2_{\mathbb{Q}_p} \leq C\left(\|\mathbf{f}_f\|^2_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_f)} + \|\mathbf{f}_p\|^2_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_p)} + \|\widehat{\mathbf{f}}_p\|^2_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_p)} + \|\widehat{q}_p\|^2_{\mathrm{L}^2(\Omega_p)}\right), \tag{4.23}$$

with $C > 0$ independent of $s_{0,\min}$ and ϵ. Thus, from (4.23) and the assumption (4.4), we deduce that the solution of (4.17) is bounded independently of ϵ. More precisely, there exists $\widetilde{C}_{\mathcal{J}} > 0$ independent of $s_{0,\min}$, ϵ and $\mathbf{w}_f$, such that

$$\|(\mathbf{p}_\epsilon, \mathbf{r}_\epsilon)\|_{\mathbf{Q}\times\mathbf{S}} \leq \widetilde{C}_{\mathcal{J}}\left(\|\mathbf{f}_f\|_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_f)} + \|\mathbf{f}_p\|_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_p)}\right). \tag{4.24}$$

Now, we take $\epsilon \to 0$ in (4.17). Similarly to Showalter (2010, Theorem 3.2), and since $\mathbf{Q}$ and $\mathbf{S}$ are reflexive Banach spaces, we can extract weakly convergent subsequences $\{\mathbf{p}_{\epsilon,n}\}_{n=1}^{\infty}$ and $\{\mathbf{r}_{\epsilon,n}\}_{n=1}^{\infty}$ such that $\mathbf{p}_{\epsilon,n} \rightharpoonup \mathbf{p}$ in $\mathbf{Q}$, $\mathbf{r}_{\epsilon,n} \rightharpoonup \mathbf{r}$ in $\mathbf{S}$, which combined with the fact that $\mathcal{E}$, $\mathcal{A}$, $\mathcal{K}_{\mathbf{w}_f}$, $\mathcal{B}$, $\widehat{\mathbf{F}}$ and $\mathbf{G}$ are continuous implies that $(\mathbf{p}, \mathbf{r})$ is a solution to (4.12). Moreover, proceeding analogously to (4.24), but now, considering $\epsilon = 0$ in (4.19)–(4.21), we are able to derive (4.16), with $C_{\mathcal{J}} > 0$ independent of $s_{0,\min}$ and $\mathbf{w}_f$.

Finally, we prove that the solution of (4.12) is unique. Since (4.12) is linear, it is sufficient to prove that the problem with zero data has only the zero solution. Taking $(\widehat{\mathbf{F}}, \mathbf{G}) = (\mathbf{0}, \mathbf{0})$ in (4.12), testing it with the solution $(\mathbf{p}, \mathbf{r})$ and using Lemma 3.3 yield

$$s_0\|p_p\|^2_{\mathrm{W}_p} + \|A^{1/2}(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p + \alpha_p p_p \mathbf{I})\|^2_{\mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_p)} + C_{\mathcal{AK}}\left(\|\mathbf{u}_p\|^2_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_p)} + \|(\mathbf{T}_f, \mathbf{u}_f)\|^2 + |\mathbf{u}_f - \boldsymbol{\theta}|^2_{\mathrm{BJS}}\right) \leq \mathbf{0},$$

so it follows that $A^{1/2}(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p + \alpha_p p_p \mathbf{I}) = \mathbf{0}$, $\mathbf{u}_p = \mathbf{0}$, $\mathbf{T}_f = \mathbf{0}$ and $\mathbf{u}_f = \mathbf{0}$. Next, combining the inf-sup conditions (3.35) and (3.36) in Lemma 3.5 with the first equation of (4.12), we deduce that $p_p = 0$, $\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p = \mathbf{0}$, $\boldsymbol{\theta} = \mathbf{0}$, $\lambda = 0$, $\mathbf{u}_s = \mathbf{0}$ and $\boldsymbol{\gamma}_p = \mathbf{0}$, concluding the proof. □

4.2.2 *Step 2: The domain $\mathcal{D}$ is nonempty.* In this section, we proceed analogously to Caucao *et al.* (2017) and employ the Banach fixed-point theorem to show that $\mathcal{D}$ (cf. (4.3)) is nonempty.

LEMMA 4.7 Let $r \in (0, r_0)$, with r_0 given by (3.28) and assume that the conditions in Lemma 3.3 are satisfied. Then, for all $\mathbf{w}_f, \widetilde{\mathbf{w}}_f \in \mathbf{W}_r$, there holds

$$\|\mathcal{J}(\mathbf{w}_f) - \mathcal{J}(\widetilde{\mathbf{w}}_f)\|_{\mathbf{V}_f} \leq \frac{C_{\mathcal{J}}}{r_0}\left(\|\mathbf{f}_f\|_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_f)} + \|\mathbf{f}_p\|_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_p)}\right)\|\mathbf{w}_f - \widetilde{\mathbf{w}}_f\|_{\mathbf{V}_f}, \tag{4.25}$$

where $C_{\mathcal{J}}$ is the constant from (4.16).

Proof. Given $\mathbf{w}_f, \widetilde{\mathbf{w}}_f \in \mathbf{W}_r$, we let $\mathbf{u}_f := \mathcal{J}(\mathbf{w}_f)$ and $\widetilde{\mathbf{u}}_f := \mathcal{J}(\widetilde{\mathbf{w}}_f)$. According to the definition of $\mathcal{J}$ (cf. (4.11)–(4.12)), it follows that

$$\begin{aligned}(\mathcal{E} + \mathcal{A} + \mathcal{K}_{\mathbf{w}_f})(\mathbf{p} - \widetilde{\mathbf{p}})(\mathbf{q}) + \mathcal{B}'(\mathbf{r} - \widetilde{\mathbf{r}})(\mathbf{q}) &= -\mathcal{K}_{\mathbf{w}_f - \widetilde{\mathbf{w}}_f}(\widetilde{\mathbf{p}})(\mathbf{q}) \quad \forall\, \mathbf{q} \in \mathbf{Q},\\ -\mathcal{B}(\mathbf{p} - \widetilde{\mathbf{p}})(\mathbf{s}) &= 0 \qquad\qquad\qquad \forall\, \mathbf{s} \in \mathbf{S}.\end{aligned}$$

Taking $\mathbf{q} = \mathbf{p} - \widetilde{\mathbf{p}}$ and $\mathbf{s} = \mathbf{r} - \widetilde{\mathbf{r}}$ in the foregoing equations, we obtain

$$(\mathcal{E} + \mathcal{A} + \mathcal{K}_{\mathbf{w}_f})(\mathbf{p} - \widetilde{\mathbf{p}})(\mathbf{p} - \widetilde{\mathbf{p}}) = -\mathcal{K}_{\mathbf{w}_f - \widetilde{\mathbf{w}}_f}(\widetilde{\mathbf{p}})(\mathbf{p} - \widetilde{\mathbf{p}}),$$

which, together with the continuity of $\mathcal{K}_{\mathbf{w}_f}$ with $\mathbf{w}_f \in \mathbf{W}_r$ (cf. (3.20)) and the positivity bounds of $\mathcal{E}$ and $\mathcal{A} + \mathcal{K}_{\mathbf{w}_f}$ (cf. (3.29), (3.30), (3.33)) in Lemma 3.3, implies that

$$\frac{\alpha_f}{2} \left\| (\mathbf{T}_f - \widetilde{\mathbf{T}}_f, \mathbf{u}_f - \widetilde{\mathbf{u}}_f) \right\|^2 \le C_{\mathcal{K}} \|\widetilde{\mathbf{u}}_f\|_{\mathbf{V}_f} \|\mathbf{w}_f - \widetilde{\mathbf{w}}_f\|_{\mathbf{V}_f} \|(\mathbf{T}_f - \widetilde{\mathbf{T}}_f, \mathbf{u}_f - \widetilde{\mathbf{u}}_f)\|.$$

Therefore, using the bound of $\|\widetilde{\mathbf{u}}_f\|_{\mathbf{V}_f}$, cf. (4.16), we get

$$\|\mathbf{u}_f - \widetilde{\mathbf{u}}_f\|_{\mathbf{V}_f} \le C_{\mathcal{J}} \frac{2C_{\mathcal{K}}}{\alpha_f} \left(\|\mathbf{f}_f\|_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_f)} + \|\mathbf{f}_p\|_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_p)} \right) \|\mathbf{w}_f - \widetilde{\mathbf{w}}_f\|_{\mathbf{V}_f},$$

which, combined with the definition of r_0, cf. (3.28), yields (4.25), concluding the proof. □

We are now in position to establish the main result of this section.

THEOREM 4.8 Let $r \in (0, r_0)$, with r_0 given by (3.28), and assume that the conditions in Lemma 3.3 hold. Furthermore, assume that the data satisfy

$$C_{\mathcal{J}} \left(\|\mathbf{f}_f\|_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_f)} + \|\mathbf{f}_p\|_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_p)} \right) \le r. \tag{4.26}$$

Then, for each $(\widehat{\mathbf{f}}_p, \widehat{q}_p) \in E_b'$ satisfying (4.4), the resolvent problem (4.5) has a unique solution $(\mathbf{p}, \mathbf{r}) \in \mathbf{Q} \times \mathbf{S}$ with $\mathbf{u}_f \in \mathbf{W}_r$, and there holds

$$\|(\mathbf{p}, \mathbf{r})\|_{\mathbf{Q} \times \mathbf{S}} \le C_{\mathcal{J}} \left(\|\mathbf{f}_f\|_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_f)} + \|\mathbf{f}_p\|_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_p)} \right). \tag{4.27}$$

Proof. Let us fix an arbitrary $(\widehat{\mathbf{f}}_p, \widehat{q}_p) \in E_b'$ satisfying (4.4). We note that (4.16) and (4.26) imply that $\mathcal{J} : \mathbf{W}_r \to \mathbf{W}_r$. Combining bound (4.25) and assumption (4.26), we have

$$\|\mathcal{J}(\mathbf{w}_f) - \mathcal{J}(\widetilde{\mathbf{w}}_f)\|_{\mathbf{V}_f} \le \frac{r}{r_0} \|\mathbf{w}_f - \widetilde{\mathbf{w}}_f\|_{\mathbf{V}_f},$$

which implies that $\mathcal{J}$ is a contraction mapping. Therefore, by the classical Banach fixed-point theorem, we conclude that $\mathcal{J}$ has a unique fixed-point $\mathbf{u}_f \in \mathbf{W}_r$, or equivalently, (4.5) has a unique solution, hence the domain $\mathcal{D}$ (cf. (4.3)) is nonempty. In addition, (4.27) follows directly from (4.16). □

4.2.3 *Step 3: Solvability of the parabolic problem.* In this section, we establish the existence of a solution to (4.9) as a direct application of Theorem 4.1. We begin by showing that $\mathcal{M}$ defined by (4.8) is a monotone operator.

LEMMA 4.9 Let $r \in (0, r_0)$ with r_0 defined by (3.28). Assume that the parameters κ_1, κ_2 satisfy the conditions in Lemma 3.3. Furthermore, assume that the data satisfy (4.26). Then, the operator $\mathcal{M}$ defined by (4.8) is monotone.

Proof. For each $(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p^i, p_p^i) \in \mathcal{D}$, $i \in \{1,2\}$, let $(\widehat{\mathbf{f}}_p^i, \widehat{q}_p^i) \in E_b'$ be such that $(\widehat{\mathbf{f}}_p^i, \widehat{q}_p^i) - \mathcal{N}(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p^i, p_p^i) \in \mathcal{M}(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p^i, p_p^i)$, i.e., (4.3) holds. Then we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
&\big((\widehat{\mathbf{f}}_p^i, \widehat{q}_p^i) - \mathcal{N}(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p^i, p_p^i)\big)(\boldsymbol{\tau}_p, w_p) \\
&\quad = (\widehat{\mathbf{f}}_p^i, \boldsymbol{\tau}_p)_{\Omega_p} + (\widehat{q}_p^i, w_p)_{\Omega_p} - (A(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p^i + \alpha_p p_p^i \mathbf{I}), \boldsymbol{\tau}_p + \alpha_p w_p \mathbf{I})_{\Omega_p} - (s_0 p_p^i, w_p)_{\Omega_p} \\
&\quad = -b_p(w_p, \mathbf{u}_p^i) - b_{\mathbf{n}_p}(\boldsymbol{\tau}_p, \boldsymbol{\theta}^i) + b_s(\mathbf{u}_s^i, \boldsymbol{\tau}_p) + b_{\mathrm{sk}}(\boldsymbol{\gamma}_p^i, \boldsymbol{\tau}_p) \quad \forall\, (\boldsymbol{\tau}_p, w_p) \in \mathbb{X}_p \times \mathrm{W}_p.
\end{aligned}
$$

Then, using the association $\mathbf{v}^i = (\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p^i, p_p^i)$ and $\mathbf{f}^i = (\widehat{\mathbf{f}}_p^i, \widehat{q}_p^i) - \mathcal{N}(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p^i, p_p^i)$, $i \in \{1,2\}$, we deduce that

$$
\begin{aligned}
(\mathbf{f}^1 - \mathbf{f}^2)(\mathbf{v}^1 - \mathbf{v}^2) = {} & -b_p(p_p^1 - p_p^2, \mathbf{u}_p^1 - \mathbf{u}_p^2) - b_{\mathbf{n}_p}(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p^1 - \boldsymbol{\sigma}_p^2, \boldsymbol{\theta}^1 - \boldsymbol{\theta}^2) + b_s(\mathbf{u}_s^1 - \mathbf{u}_s^2, \boldsymbol{\sigma}_p^1 - \boldsymbol{\sigma}_p^2) \\
& + b_{\mathrm{sk}}(\boldsymbol{\gamma}_p^1 - \boldsymbol{\gamma}_p^2, \boldsymbol{\sigma}_p^1 - \boldsymbol{\sigma}_p^2).
\end{aligned} \tag{4.28}
$$

In turn, from (4.3), it follows that $((\mathbf{u}_p^i, \mathbf{T}_f^i, \mathbf{u}_f^i, \boldsymbol{\theta}^i), \lambda^i, \mathbf{u}_s^i, \boldsymbol{\gamma}_p^i)$ satisfy

$$
\begin{aligned}
& s_0\,(p_p^i, w_p)_{\Omega_p} + a_e(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p^i, p_p^i; \boldsymbol{\tau}_p, w_p) + a_p(\mathbf{u}_p^i, \mathbf{v}_p) + a_f(\mathbf{T}_f^i, \mathbf{u}_f^i; \mathbf{R}_f, \mathbf{v}_f) + \kappa_{\mathbf{u}_f^i}(\mathbf{T}_f^i, \mathbf{u}_f^i; \mathbf{R}_f, \mathbf{v}_f) \\
& \quad + a_{\mathtt{BJS}}(\mathbf{u}_f^i, \boldsymbol{\theta}^i; \mathbf{v}_f, \boldsymbol{\phi}) + b_p(p_p^i, \mathbf{v}_p) - b_p(w_p, \mathbf{u}_p^i) + b_{\mathbf{n}_p}(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p^i, \boldsymbol{\phi}) - b_{\mathbf{n}_p}(\boldsymbol{\tau}_p, \boldsymbol{\theta}^i) + b_s(\mathbf{u}_s^i, \boldsymbol{\tau}_p) \\
& \quad + b_{\mathrm{sk}}(\boldsymbol{\gamma}_p^i, \boldsymbol{\tau}_p) + b_\Gamma(\mathbf{v}_p, \mathbf{v}_f, \boldsymbol{\phi}; \lambda^i) \;=\; (\widehat{\mathbf{f}}_p^i, \boldsymbol{\tau}_p)_{\Omega_p} + (\widehat{q}_p^i, w_p)_{\Omega_p} + (\mathbf{f}_f, \mathbf{v}_f - \kappa_1\, \mathbf{div}(\mathbf{R}_f))_{\Omega_f}, \\
& \quad - b_s(\mathbf{v}_s, \boldsymbol{\sigma}_p^i) - b_{\mathrm{sk}}(\boldsymbol{\chi}_p, \boldsymbol{\sigma}_p^i) - b_\Gamma(\mathbf{u}_p^i, \mathbf{u}_f^i, \boldsymbol{\theta}^i; \xi) \;=\; (\mathbf{f}_p, \mathbf{v}_s)_{\Omega_p} \quad \forall\, (\mathbf{q}, \mathbf{s}) \in \mathbf{Q} \times \mathbf{S}.
\end{aligned} \tag{4.29}
$$

Testing (4.29) with $\mathbf{q} = (\mathbf{0}, 0, \mathbf{u}_p^1 - \mathbf{u}_p^2, \mathbf{T}_f^1 - \mathbf{T}_f^2, \mathbf{u}_f^1 - \mathbf{u}_f^2, \boldsymbol{\theta}^1 - \boldsymbol{\theta}^2)$ and $\mathbf{s} = (\lambda^1 - \lambda^2, \mathbf{u}_s^1 - \mathbf{u}_s^2, \boldsymbol{\gamma}_p^1 - \boldsymbol{\gamma}_p^2)$, for $i \in \{1,2\}$, we find that

$$
\begin{aligned}
& -b_p(p_p^1 - p_p^2, \mathbf{u}_p^1 - \mathbf{u}_p^2) - b_{\mathbf{n}_p}(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p^1 - \boldsymbol{\sigma}_p^2, \boldsymbol{\theta}^1 - \boldsymbol{\theta}^2) + b_s(\mathbf{u}_s^1 - \mathbf{u}_s^2, \boldsymbol{\sigma}_p^1 - \boldsymbol{\sigma}_p^2) + b_{\mathrm{sk}}(\boldsymbol{\gamma}_p^1 - \boldsymbol{\gamma}_p^2, \boldsymbol{\sigma}_p^1 - \boldsymbol{\sigma}_p^2) \\
& = a_p(\mathbf{u}_p^1 - \mathbf{u}_p^2, \mathbf{u}_p^1 - \mathbf{u}_p^2) + a_f(\mathbf{T}_f^1 - \mathbf{T}_f^2, \mathbf{u}_f^1 - \mathbf{u}_f^2; \mathbf{T}_f^1 - \mathbf{T}_f^2, \mathbf{u}_f^1 - \mathbf{u}_f^2) + \kappa_{\mathbf{u}_f^1}(\mathbf{T}_f^1, \mathbf{u}_f^1; \mathbf{T}_f^1 - \mathbf{T}_f^2, \mathbf{u}_f^1 - \mathbf{u}_f^2) \\
& \quad - \kappa_{\mathbf{u}_f^2}(\mathbf{T}_f^2, \mathbf{u}_f^2; \mathbf{T}_f^1 - \mathbf{T}_f^2, \mathbf{u}_f^1 - \mathbf{u}_f^2) + a_{\mathtt{BJS}}(\mathbf{u}_f^1 - \mathbf{u}_f^2, \boldsymbol{\theta}^1 - \boldsymbol{\theta}^2; \mathbf{u}_f^1 - \mathbf{u}_f^2, \boldsymbol{\theta}^1 - \boldsymbol{\theta}^2),
\end{aligned}
$$

which, replaced back into (4.28) together with the stability properties developed for $a_p, a_f, a_{\mathrm{BJS}}$ in (3.33)–(3.34) (cf. Lemma 3.3) and the continuity of $\kappa_{\mathbf{u}_f}$, cf. (3.20), yields

$$\begin{aligned}
(\mathbf{f}^1-\mathbf{f}^2)(\mathbf{v}^1-\mathbf{v}^2) &= a_p(\mathbf{u}_p^1-\mathbf{u}_p^2,\mathbf{u}_p^1-\mathbf{u}_p^2) + a_f(\mathbf{T}_f^1-\mathbf{T}_f^2,\mathbf{u}_f^1-\mathbf{u}_f^2;\mathbf{T}_f^1-\mathbf{T}_f^2,\mathbf{u}_f^1-\mathbf{u}_f^2)\\
&\quad + \kappa_{\mathbf{u}_f^1-\mathbf{u}_f^2}(\mathbf{T}_f^1,\mathbf{u}_f^1;\mathbf{T}_f^1-\mathbf{T}_f^2,\mathbf{u}_f^1-\mathbf{u}_f^2) + \kappa_{\mathbf{u}_f^2}(\mathbf{T}_f^1-\mathbf{T}_f^2,\mathbf{u}_f^1-\mathbf{u}_f^2;\mathbf{T}_f^1-\mathbf{T}_f^2,\mathbf{u}_f^1-\mathbf{u}_f^2)\\
&\quad + a_{\mathrm{BJS}}(\mathbf{u}_f^1-\mathbf{u}_f^2,\boldsymbol{\theta}^1-\boldsymbol{\theta}^2;\mathbf{u}_f^1-\mathbf{u}_f^2,\boldsymbol{\theta}^1-\boldsymbol{\theta}^2)\\
&\geq \Big(\alpha_f - C_{\mathcal{K}}\big(\|\mathbf{u}_f^1\|_{\mathbf{V}_f}+\|\mathbf{u}_f^2\|_{\mathbf{V}_f}\big)\Big)\,\|(\mathbf{T}_f^1-\mathbf{T}_f^2,\mathbf{u}_f^1-\mathbf{u}_f^2)\|^2.
\end{aligned}$$

Finally, recalling from the definition of the domain $\mathcal{D}$ (cf. (4.3)) that both $\|\mathbf{u}_f^1\|_{\mathbf{V}_f}$ and $\|\mathbf{u}_f^2\|_{\mathbf{V}_f}$ are bounded by r, we obtain

$$(\mathbf{f}^1-\mathbf{f}^2)(\mathbf{v}^1-\mathbf{v}^2) \;\geq\; 2\;C_{\mathcal{K}}\,(r_0-r)\,\|(\mathbf{T}_f^1-\mathbf{T}_f^2,\mathbf{u}_f^1-\mathbf{u}_f^2)\|^2 \;\geq\; 0,$$

which implies the monotonicity of $\mathcal{M}$. □

Now, we are in position to establish the well-posedness of (4.9).

LEMMA 4.10 Under the conditions of Lemma 4.9, for each $(h_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p}, h_{p_p}) \in \mathrm{W}^{1,1}(0,T;\mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_p)) \times \mathrm{W}^{1,1}(0,T;\mathrm{L}^2(\Omega_p))$ and each $(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_{p,0}, p_{p,0}) \in \mathcal{D}$, there exists a solution $(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p, p_p) : [0,T] \to \mathcal{D}$ to (4.9) with

$$(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p, p_p) \in \mathrm{W}^{1,\infty}(0,T;\mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_p)) \times \mathrm{W}^{1,\infty}(0,T;\mathrm{W}_p) \quad \text{and} \quad (\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p(0), p_p(0)) = (\boldsymbol{\sigma}_{p,0}, p_{p,0}).$$

Proof. We recall that (4.9) fits in the framework of Theorem 4.1 with $E = \mathbb{X}_p \times \mathrm{W}_p, E_b' = \mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_p) \times \mathrm{L}^2(\Omega_p)$ and $\mathcal{N}, \mathcal{M}$ defined in (4.2) and (4.8), respectively. Note that $\mathcal{N}$ is linear, symmetric and monotone. In addition, from Lemma 4.9, we obtain that $\mathcal{M}$ is monotone. On the other hand, for the range condition $Rg(\mathcal{N}+\mathcal{M}) = E_b'$ in Theorem 4.1, we note that in our case $Rg(\mathcal{N}+\mathcal{M})$ is a subset of E_b', see its definition (4.8). Therefore, it is enough to establish the range condition $Rg(\mathcal{N}+\mathcal{M}) = \tilde{E}_b'$, where $\tilde{E}_b' := \{(\widehat{\mathbf{f}}_p, \widehat{q}_p) \in E_b' : \text{(4.4) holds}\}$. This follows from Theorem 4.8, where we established that for each $(\widehat{\mathbf{f}}_p, \widehat{q}_p) \in \tilde{E}_b'$, there exists $(\widehat{\boldsymbol{\sigma}}_p, \widehat{p}_p) \in \mathcal{D}$ a solution to (4.5). Therefore, applying Theorem 4.1 in our context, we conclude that there exists a solution $(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p, p_p) : [0,T] \to \mathcal{D}$ to (4.9), with $(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p, p_p) \in \mathrm{W}^{1,\infty}(0,T;\mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_p)) \times \mathrm{W}^{1,\infty}(0,T;\mathrm{W}_p)$ and $(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p(0), p_p(0)) = (\boldsymbol{\sigma}_{p,0}, p_{p,0})$. □

4.2.4 *Construction of compatible initial data.* We next construct initial data $(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_{p,0}, p_{p,0}) \in \mathcal{D}$, which is needed in Lemma 4.10.

LEMMA 4.11 Let $(\mathbf{f}_f, \mathbf{f}_p) \in \mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_f) \times \mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_p)$. Assume that the conditions of Lemma 3.3 are satisfied. Assume that the initial condition $p_{p,0} \in \mathrm{H}_p$, where

$$\mathrm{H}_p \;:=\; \Big\{ w_p \in \mathrm{H}^1(\Omega_p) : \quad \mathbf{K}\nabla w_p \in \mathbf{H}^1(\Omega_p),\; \mathbf{K}\nabla w_p \cdot \mathbf{n}_p = 0 \text{ on } \Gamma_p^{\mathrm{N}},\; w_p = 0 \text{ on } \Gamma_p^{\mathrm{D}} \Big\}. \tag{4.30}$$

Furthermore, assume that there exists $C_0 > 0$ such that

$$\|p_{p,0}\|_{\mathrm{H}^1(\Omega_p)} + \|\mathbf{K}\nabla p_{p,0}\|_{\mathbf{H}^1(\Omega_p)} \leq C_0 \left(\|\mathbf{f}_f\|_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_f)} + \|\mathbf{f}_p\|_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_p)}\right), \tag{4.31}$$

$$\text{and} \quad C_{\mathcal{J}_0} \left(\|\mathbf{f}_f\|_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_f)} + \|p_{p,0}\|_{\mathrm{H}^1(\Omega_p)} + \|\mathbf{K}\nabla p_{p,0}\|_{\mathbf{H}^1(\Omega_p)}\right) \leq r, \tag{4.32}$$

for $r \in (0, r_0)$, where r_0 is defined in (3.28) and $C_{\mathcal{J}_0} > 0$ is defined in (4.38) below. Then, there exists $\boldsymbol{\sigma}_{p,0} \in \mathbb{X}_p$ such that $(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_{p,0}, p_{p,0}) \in \mathcal{D}$. In particular, there exist $\mathbf{p}_0 := (\boldsymbol{\sigma}_{p,0}, p_{p,0}, \mathbf{u}_{p,0}, \mathbf{T}_{f,0}, \mathbf{u}_{f,0}, \boldsymbol{\theta}_0) \in \mathbf{Q}$ and $\mathbf{r}_0 := (\lambda_0, \mathbf{u}_{s,0}, \boldsymbol{\gamma}_{p,0}) \in \mathbf{S}$ with $\mathbf{u}_{f,0} \in \mathbf{W}_r$ such that

$$\begin{aligned} (\mathcal{E} + \mathcal{A} + \mathcal{K}_{\mathbf{u}_{f,0}})(\mathbf{p}_0) + \mathcal{B}'(\mathbf{r}_0) &= \widehat{\mathbf{F}}_0 \quad \text{in} \quad \mathbf{Q}_2', \\ -\mathcal{B}(\mathbf{p}_0) &= \mathbf{G}_0 \quad \text{in} \quad \mathbf{S}', \end{aligned} \tag{4.33}$$

where $\mathbf{G}_0(\mathbf{s}) := (\mathbf{f}_p, \mathbf{v}_s)_{\Omega_p}\ \forall\, \mathbf{s} \in \mathbf{S}$ and $\widehat{\mathbf{F}}_0(\mathbf{q}) := (\widehat{\mathbf{f}}_{p,0}, \boldsymbol{\tau}_p)_{\Omega_p} + (\widehat{q}_{p,0}, w_p)_{\Omega_p} + (\mathbf{f}_f, \mathbf{v}_f - \kappa_1 \mathbf{div}(\mathbf{R}_f))_{\Omega_f}\ \forall\, \mathbf{q} \in \mathbf{Q}$, with some $(\widehat{\mathbf{f}}_{p,0}, \widehat{q}_{p,0}) \in E_b'$, satisfying

$$\|\widehat{\mathbf{f}}_{p,0}\|_{\mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_p)} + \|\widehat{q}_{p,0}\|_{\mathrm{L}^2(\Omega_p)} \leq \widehat{C}_{ep} \left(\|\mathbf{f}_f\|_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_f)} + \|\mathbf{f}_p\|_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_p)}\right), \tag{4.34}$$

where $\widehat{C}_{ep}$ is specified in (4.46) below.

Proof. We proceed as in Ambartsumyan *et al.* (2019a, Lemma 4.15). We solve a sequence of well-defined sub-problems, using the previously obtained solutions as data to guarantee that we obtain a solution of the coupled problem. We take the following steps.

1. Define $\mathbf{u}_{p,0} := -\dfrac{1}{\mu}\mathbf{K}\nabla p_{p,0}$, with $p_{p,0} \in \mathrm{H}_p$, cf. (4.30). It follows that $\mathbf{u}_{p,0} \in \mathbf{H}(\mathrm{div}; \Omega_p)$ and

$$\mu\, \mathbf{K}^{-1}\mathbf{u}_{p,0} = -\nabla p_{p,0}, \quad \mathrm{div}(\mathbf{u}_{p,0}) = -\frac{1}{\mu}\mathrm{div}(\mathbf{K}\nabla p_{p,0}) \quad \text{in} \quad \Omega_p, \quad \mathbf{u}_{p,0} \cdot \mathbf{n}_p = 0 \quad \text{on} \quad \Gamma_p^{\mathrm{N}}. \tag{4.35}$$

Next, defining $\lambda_0 := p_{p,0}|_{\Gamma_{fp}} \in \Lambda_p$, (4.35) yields

$$a_p(\mathbf{u}_{p,0}, \mathbf{v}_p) + b_p(\mathbf{v}_p, p_{p,0}) + b_\Gamma(\mathbf{v}_p, \mathbf{0}, \mathbf{0}; \lambda_0) = 0 \quad \forall\, \mathbf{v}_p \in \mathbf{V}_p. \tag{4.36}$$

2. Define $(\mathbf{T}_{f,0}, \mathbf{u}_{f,0}) \in \mathbb{X}_f \times \mathbf{V}_f$ associated to the problem

$$\begin{aligned} &a_f(\mathbf{T}_{f,0}, \mathbf{u}_{f,0}; \mathbf{R}_f, \mathbf{v}_f) + \kappa_{\mathbf{u}_{f,0}}(\mathbf{T}_{f,0}, \mathbf{u}_{f,0}; \mathbf{R}_f, \mathbf{v}_f) \\ &\quad = -\mu\,\alpha_{BJS} \sum_{j=1}^{n-1} \left\langle \sqrt{\mathbf{K}_j^{-1}}\mathbf{u}_{p,0} \cdot \mathbf{t}_{f,j}, \mathbf{v}_f \cdot \mathbf{t}_{f,j} \right\rangle_{\Gamma_{fp}} - \langle \mathbf{v}_f \cdot \mathbf{n}_f, \lambda_0 \rangle_{\Gamma_{fp}} + (\mathbf{f}_f, \mathbf{v}_f - \kappa_1\, \mathbf{div}(\mathbf{R}_f))_{\Omega_f}, \end{aligned} \tag{4.37}$$

for all $(\mathbf{R}_f, \mathbf{v}_f) \in \mathbb{X}_f \times \mathbf{V}_f$. Notice that (4.37) is well-posed, since it corresponds to the weak solution of the augmented mixed formulation for the Navier–Stokes problem with mixed boundary conditions.

Notice that $\mathbf{u}_{p,0}$ and λ_0 are data for this problem. The well-posedness of (4.37) follows from a fixed point approach as in (4.11) combined with the *a priori* estimate

$$\|(\mathbf{T}_{f,0},\mathbf{u}_{f,0})\| \;\leq\; C_{\mathcal{J}_0}\,\Big(\|\mathbf{f}_f\|_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_f)} + \|p_{p,0}\|_{\mathrm{H}^1(\Omega_p)} + \|\mathbf{K}\nabla p_{p,0}\|_{\mathbf{H}^1(\Omega_p)}\Big) \tag{4.38}$$

and the data assumption (4.32). We refer to Camaño *et al.* (2017) for a similar approach applied to the stationary Navier–Stokes problem. We note that (4.32) and (4.38) imply that $\mathbf{u}_{f,0} \in \mathbf{W}_r$.

3. Define $(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_{p,0},\boldsymbol{\eta}_{p,0},\boldsymbol{\rho}_{p,0},\boldsymbol{\psi}_0) \in \mathbb{X}_p \times \mathbf{V}_s \times \mathbb{Q}_p \times \boldsymbol{\Lambda}_s$ such that

$$\begin{aligned}
&(A\boldsymbol{\sigma}_{p,0},\boldsymbol{\tau}_p)_{\Omega_p} + b_s(\boldsymbol{\eta}_{p,0},\boldsymbol{\tau}_p) + b_{\mathrm{sk}}(\boldsymbol{\rho}_{p,0},\boldsymbol{\tau}_p) - b_{\mathbf{n}_p}(\boldsymbol{\psi}_0,\boldsymbol{\tau}_p) = -(A\alpha p_{p,0}\mathbf{I},\boldsymbol{\tau}_p)_{\Omega_p} && \forall\,\boldsymbol{\tau}_p \in \mathbb{X}_p,\\
&-b_s(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_{p,0},\mathbf{v}_s) = (\mathbf{f}_p,\mathbf{v}_s)_{\Omega_p} && \forall\,\mathbf{v}_s \in \mathbf{V}_s,\\
&-b_{\mathrm{sk}}(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_{p,0},\boldsymbol{\chi}_p) = 0 && \forall\,\boldsymbol{\chi}_p \in \mathbb{Q}_p,\\
&b_{\mathbf{n}_p}(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_{p,0},\boldsymbol{\phi}) = -\mu\,\alpha_{BJS}\sum_{j=1}^{n-1}\left\langle\sqrt{\mathbf{K}_j^{-1}}\mathbf{u}_{p,0}\cdot\mathbf{t}_{f,j},\boldsymbol{\phi}\cdot\mathbf{t}_{f,j}\right\rangle_{\Gamma_{fp}} - \langle\boldsymbol{\phi}\cdot\mathbf{n}_p,\lambda_0\rangle_{\Gamma_{fp}} && \forall\,\boldsymbol{\phi} \in \boldsymbol{\Lambda}_s.
\end{aligned} \tag{4.39}$$

This is a well-posed problem corresponding to the weak solution of the mixed elasticity system with mixed boundary conditions on Γ_{fp}. Note that $p_{p,0}$, $\mathbf{u}_{p,0}$ and λ_0 are data for this problem. The following stability bound holds:

$$\|\boldsymbol{\sigma}_{p,0}\|_{\mathbb{X}_p} + \|\boldsymbol{\eta}_{p,0}\|_{\mathbf{V}_s} + \|\boldsymbol{\rho}_{p,0}\|_{\mathbb{Q}_p} + \|\boldsymbol{\psi}_0\|_{\boldsymbol{\Lambda}_s} \leq C\Big(\|p_{p,0}\|_{\mathrm{H}^1(\Omega_p)} + \|\mathbf{K}\nabla p_{p,0}\|_{\mathbf{H}^1(\Omega_p)} + \|\mathbf{f}_p\|_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_p)}\Big). \tag{4.40}$$

We note that $\boldsymbol{\eta}_{p,0}$, $\boldsymbol{\rho}_{p,0}$ and $\boldsymbol{\psi}_0$ are auxiliary variables that are not part of the constructed initial data. However, they can be used to recover the variables $\boldsymbol{\eta}_p$, $\boldsymbol{\rho}_p$ and $\boldsymbol{\psi}$ that satisfy the nondifferentiated equation (3.7).

4. Define $\boldsymbol{\theta}_0 \in \boldsymbol{\Lambda}_s$ as

$$\boldsymbol{\theta}_0 = \mathbf{u}_{f,0} - \mathbf{u}_{p,0} \quad \text{on} \quad \Gamma_{fp}, \tag{4.41}$$

where $\mathbf{u}_{f,0}$ and $\mathbf{u}_{p,0}$ are data obtained in the previous steps. It holds that

$$\|\boldsymbol{\theta}_0\|_{\boldsymbol{\Lambda}_s} \leq C\big(\|\mathbf{u}_{f,0}\|_{\mathbf{H}^1(\Omega_f)} + \|\mathbf{u}_{p,0}\|_{\mathbf{H}^1(\Omega_p)}\big) \leq C\big(\|\mathbf{f}_f\|_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_f)} + \|p_{p,0}\|_{\mathrm{H}^1(\Omega_p)} + \|\mathbf{K}\nabla p_{p,0}\|_{\mathbf{H}^1(\Omega_p)}\big). \tag{4.42}$$

Note that (4.41) implies that the BJS terms in (4.37) and (4.39) can be rewritten with $\mathbf{u}_{p,0}\cdot\mathbf{t}_{f,j} = (\mathbf{u}_{f,0} - \boldsymbol{\theta}_0)\cdot\mathbf{t}_{f,j}$ and that (3.6h) holds for the initial data.

5. Finally, define $(\widehat{\boldsymbol{\sigma}}_{p,0}, \mathbf{u}_{s,0}, \boldsymbol{\gamma}_{p,0}) \in \mathbb{X}_p \times \mathbf{V}_s \times \mathbb{Q}_p$, as the unique solution of the problem

$$\begin{aligned}
&(A\widehat{\boldsymbol{\sigma}}_{p,0}, \boldsymbol{\tau}_p)_{\Omega_p} + b_s(\mathbf{u}_{s,0}, \boldsymbol{\tau}_p) + b_{\mathrm{sk}}(\boldsymbol{\gamma}_{p,0}, \boldsymbol{\tau}_p) = b_{\mathbf{n}_p}(\boldsymbol{\theta}_0, \boldsymbol{\tau}_p) && \forall\, \boldsymbol{\tau}_p \in \mathbb{X}_p,\\
&-b_s(\widehat{\boldsymbol{\sigma}}_{p,0}, \mathbf{v}_s) = 0 && \forall\, \mathbf{v}_s \in \mathbf{V}_s,\\
&-b_{\mathrm{sk}}(\widehat{\boldsymbol{\sigma}}_{p,0}, \boldsymbol{\chi}_p) = 0 && \forall\, \boldsymbol{\chi}_p \in \mathbb{Q}_p.
\end{aligned} \tag{4.43}$$

This is a well-posed problem, since it corresponds to the weak solution of the mixed elasticity system with Dirichlet data $\boldsymbol{\theta}_0$ on Γ_{fp}. Using (4.42), we have the stability bound

$$\|\widehat{\boldsymbol{\sigma}}_{p,0}\|_{\mathbb{X}_p} + \|\mathbf{u}_{s,0}\|_{\mathbf{V}_s} + \|\boldsymbol{\gamma}_{p,0}\|_{\mathbb{Q}_p} \le C\|\boldsymbol{\theta}_0\|_{\boldsymbol{\Lambda}_s} \le C\big(\|\mathbf{f}_f\|_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_f)} + \|p_{p,0}\|_{\mathrm{H}^1(\Omega_p)} + \|\mathbf{K}\nabla p_{p,0}\|_{\mathbf{H}^1(\Omega_p)}\big). \tag{4.44}$$

We note that $\widehat{\boldsymbol{\sigma}}_{p,0}$ is an auxiliary variable not used in the initial data.

Combining (4.35)–(4.43), we obtain $(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_{p,0}, p_{p,0}, \mathbf{u}_{p,0}, \mathbf{T}_{f,0}, \mathbf{u}_{f,0}, \boldsymbol{\theta}_0) \in \mathbf{Q}$ and $(\boldsymbol{\lambda}_0, \mathbf{u}_{s,0}, \boldsymbol{\gamma}_{p,0}) \in \mathbf{S}$ satisfying (4.33) with $\widehat{\mathbf{f}}_{p,0}$ and $\widehat{q}_{p,0}$ such that

$$\begin{aligned}
&(\widehat{\mathbf{f}}_{p,0}, \boldsymbol{\tau}_p)_{\Omega_p} = a_e(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_{p,0}, p_{p,0}; \boldsymbol{\tau}_p, 0) - (A(\widehat{\boldsymbol{\sigma}}_{p,0}), \boldsymbol{\tau}_p)_{\Omega_p}, \quad \text{and}\\
&(\widehat{q}_{p,0}, w_p)_{\Omega_p} = (s_0 p_{p,0}, w_p)_{\Omega_p} + a_e(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_{p,0}, p_{p,0}; \mathbf{0}, w_p) - b_p(\mathbf{u}_{p,0}, w_p).
\end{aligned} \tag{4.45}$$

Using (4.40), (4.44) and (4.31), we obtain

$$\begin{aligned}
\|\widehat{\mathbf{f}}_{p,0}\|_{\mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_p)} + \|\widehat{q}_{p,0}\|_{\mathrm{L}^2(\Omega_p)} &\le C\left(\|\mathbf{f}_f\|_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_f)} + \|\mathbf{f}_p\|_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_p)} + \|p_{p,0}\|_{\mathrm{H}^1(\Omega_p)} + \|\mathbf{K}\nabla p_{p,0}\|_{\mathbf{H}^1(\Omega_p)}\right)\\
&\le \widehat{C}_{ep}\left(\|\mathbf{f}_f\|_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_f)} + \|\mathbf{f}_p\|_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_p)}\right),
\end{aligned} \tag{4.46}$$

hence $(\widehat{\mathbf{f}}_{p,0}, \widehat{q}_{p,0}) \in E_b'$ and (4.34) holds. □

4.3 *Main result*

We establish the existence of a solution to (3.16) as a direct consequence of Lemma 4.10 and Lemma 4.3.

THEOREM 4.12 Assume that the conditions of Lemma 3.3 are satisfied. Then, for each

$$\mathbf{f}_f \in \mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_f), \quad \mathbf{f}_p \in \mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_p), \quad q_p \in \mathrm{W}^{1,1}(0,T;\mathrm{L}^2(\Omega_p)), \quad p_{p,0} \in \mathrm{H}_p \ (cf.\ (4.30)),$$

under the assumptions of Theorem 4.8 (cf. (4.26)) and Lemma 4.11 (cf. (4.31) and (4.32)), there exists a unique solution of (3.16), $(\mathbf{p}, \mathbf{r}) : [0,T] \to \mathbf{Q} \times \mathbf{S}$ with $\mathbf{u}_f(t) \in \mathbf{W}_r$ (cf. (3.27)), $(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p, p_p) \in \mathrm{W}^{1,\infty}(0,T;\mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_p)) \times \mathrm{W}^{1,\infty}(0,T;\mathrm{W}_p)$ and $(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p(0), p_p(0)) = (\boldsymbol{\sigma}_{p,0}, p_{p,0})$, where $\boldsymbol{\sigma}_{p,0}$ is constructed in Lemma 4.11. In addition, $\mathbf{u}_p(0) = \mathbf{u}_{p,0}$, $\mathbf{T}_f(0) = \mathbf{T}_{f,0}$, $\mathbf{u}_f(0) = \mathbf{u}_{f,0}$, $\boldsymbol{\theta}(0) = \boldsymbol{\theta}_0$ and $\lambda(0) = \lambda_0$.

Proof. First, existence of a solution $(\mathbf{p}, \mathbf{r}) : [0,T] \to \mathbf{Q} \times \mathbf{S}$ of (3.16) with

$$(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p, p_p) \in \mathrm{W}^{1,\infty}(0,T;\mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_p)) \times \mathrm{W}^{1,\infty}(0,T;\mathrm{W}_p)$$

and $(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p(0), p_p(0)) = (\boldsymbol{\sigma}_{p,0}, p_{p,0})$ follows from Lemmas 4.10 and 4.3. Moreover, since $(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p(t), p_p(t)) \in \mathcal{D}$ for each $t \in [0,T]$ (cf. Lemma 4.10), it follows from the definition of the domain $\mathcal{D}$ (cf. (4.3)) that $\mathbf{u}_f(t) \in \mathbf{W}_r$ for $t \in [0,T]$.

We next show that the solution of (3.16) is unique. To that end, let $(\mathbf{p},\mathbf{r})$ and $(\widetilde{\mathbf{p}},\widetilde{\mathbf{r}})$ be two solutions corresponding to the same data and denote $\overline{\mathbf{p}} = \mathbf{p} - \widetilde{\mathbf{p}}$ with similar notations for the rest of variables. We find that

$$\partial_t \mathcal{E}(\overline{\mathbf{p}})(\mathbf{q}) + \mathcal{A}(\overline{\mathbf{p}})(\mathbf{q}) + \mathcal{K}_{\mathbf{u}_f}(\overline{\mathbf{p}})(\mathbf{q}) + \mathcal{K}_{\overline{\mathbf{u}}_f}(\widetilde{\mathbf{p}})(\mathbf{q}) + \mathcal{B}'(\overline{\mathbf{r}})(\mathbf{q}) = \mathbf{0} \quad \forall\, \mathbf{q} \in \mathbf{Q},$$
$$-\mathcal{B}(\overline{\mathbf{p}})(\mathbf{s}) = \mathbf{0} \quad \forall\, \mathbf{s} \in \mathbf{S}. \tag{4.47}$$

Taking (4.47) with $\mathbf{q} = \overline{\mathbf{p}}$ and $\mathbf{s} = \overline{\mathbf{r}}$, making use of the continuity of $\mathcal{K}_{\mathbf{w}_f}$ in (3.20) and the estimates (3.29), (3.33) and (3.34) in Lemma 3.3 for $\mathcal{E}$ and $\mathcal{A} + \mathcal{K}_{\mathbf{w}_f}$, we deduce that

$$\begin{aligned} &\frac{1}{2}\,\partial_t \left(\|A^{1/2}(\overline{\boldsymbol{\sigma}}_p + \alpha_p \overline{p}_p \mathbf{I})\|^2_{\mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_p)} + s_0\,\|\overline{p}_p\|^2_{\mathrm{W}_p} \right) + \mu\, k_{\max}^{-1} \|\overline{\mathbf{u}}_p\|^2_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_p)} \\ &\quad + \left(\alpha_f - C_{\mathcal{K}}\big(\|\mathbf{u}_f\|_{\mathbf{V}_f} + \|\widetilde{\mathbf{u}}_f\|_{\mathbf{V}_f} \big) \right) \|(\overline{\mathbf{T}}_f, \overline{\mathbf{u}}_f)\|^2 + c_{\mathtt{BJS}} |\overline{\mathbf{u}}_f - \overline{\boldsymbol{\phi}}|^2_{\mathtt{BJS}} \;\le\; 0. \end{aligned} \tag{4.48}$$

Integrating in time (4.48) from 0 to $t \in (0,T]$, using $\overline{\boldsymbol{\sigma}}_p(0) = \mathbf{0}$ and $\overline{p}_p(0) = 0$, we obtain

$$\|A^{1/2}(\overline{\boldsymbol{\sigma}}_p + \alpha_p \overline{p}_p \mathbf{I})\|^2_{\mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_p)} + s_0\,\|\overline{p}_p\|^2_{\mathrm{W}_p} + \int_0^t \|\overline{\mathbf{u}}_p\|^2_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_p)}\,\mathrm{d}s + 2C_{\mathcal{K}}(r_0 - r)\int_0^t \|(\overline{\mathbf{T}}_f, \overline{\mathbf{u}}_f)\|^2\,\mathrm{d}s \le 0,$$

which implies that $A^{1/2}(\overline{\boldsymbol{\sigma}}_p + \alpha_p \overline{p}_p \mathbf{I})(t) = \mathbf{0}, \overline{\mathbf{u}}_p(t) = \mathbf{0}, \overline{\mathbf{T}}_f(t) = \mathbf{0}$ and $\overline{\mathbf{u}}_f(t) = \mathbf{0}$ for all $t \in (0,T]$. In turn, using the inf-sup conditions (3.35) and (3.36) in Lemma 3.5 for $(\mathbf{v}_s, \boldsymbol{\chi}_p, \boldsymbol{\phi}) = (\overline{\mathbf{u}}_s, \overline{\boldsymbol{\gamma}}_p, \overline{\boldsymbol{\theta}})$ and $(w_p, \xi) = (\overline{p}_p, \overline{\lambda})$, respectively, and the first row of (4.47), we get

$$\begin{aligned} &\|\overline{\mathbf{u}}_s\|_{\mathbf{V}_s} + \|\overline{\boldsymbol{\gamma}}_p\|_{\mathbb{Q}_p} + \|\overline{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\|_{\boldsymbol{\Lambda}_s} + \|\overline{p}_p\|_{\mathrm{W}_p} + \|\overline{\lambda}\|_{\Lambda_p} \\ &\quad \le C \sup_{\mathbf{0} \neq (\boldsymbol{\tau}_p, \mathbf{v}_p) \in \mathbb{X}_p \times \mathbf{V}_p} \frac{(A\partial_t(\overline{\boldsymbol{\sigma}}_p + \alpha_p \overline{p}_p \mathbf{I}), \boldsymbol{\tau}_p)_{\Omega_p} + (\mu\,\mathbf{K}^{-1}\,\overline{\mathbf{u}}_p, \mathbf{v}_p)_{\Omega_p}}{\|(\boldsymbol{\tau}_p, \mathbf{v}_p)\|} = 0. \end{aligned}$$

Then, $\overline{\mathbf{u}}_s(t) = \mathbf{0}$, $\overline{\boldsymbol{\gamma}}_p(t) = \mathbf{0}$, $\overline{p}_p(t) = 0$, $\overline{\lambda}(t) = 0$ and $\overline{\boldsymbol{\theta}}(t) = \mathbf{0}$ for all $t \in (0,T]$, which implies $\overline{\boldsymbol{\sigma}}_p(t) = \mathbf{0}$ for all $t \in (0,T]$, concluding the proof of uniqueness of the solution to (3.16).

Finally, let $\overline{\mathbf{u}}_{f,0} := \mathbf{u}_f(0) - \mathbf{u}_{f,0}$, with a similar definition and notation for the rest of the variables. Due to the fact that $\mathbf{f}_f$, $\mathbf{f}_p$ are independent of time, and the assumed smoothness in time of q_p, we can take $t \to 0^+$ in (3.16). Using that the initial data $(\mathbf{p}_0, \mathbf{r}_0)$ constructed in Lemma 4.11 satisfies (4.3) at $t = 0$, and that $\overline{\boldsymbol{\sigma}}_{p,0} = \mathbf{0}$ and $\overline{p}_{p,0} = 0$, we obtain

$$\begin{aligned} &a_p(\overline{\mathbf{u}}_{p,0}, \mathbf{v}_p) + a_f(\overline{\mathbf{T}}_{f,0}, \overline{\mathbf{u}}_{f,0}; \mathbf{R}_f, \mathbf{v}_f) + \kappa_{\overline{\mathbf{u}}_{f,0}}(\mathbf{T}_f(0), \mathbf{u}_f(0); \mathbf{R}_f, \mathbf{v}_f) + \kappa_{\mathbf{u}_{f,0}}(\overline{\mathbf{T}}_{f,0}, \overline{\mathbf{u}}_{f,0}; \mathbf{R}_f, \mathbf{v}_f) \\ &\quad + a_{\mathtt{BJS}}(\overline{\mathbf{u}}_{f,0}, \overline{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_0; \mathbf{v}_f, \boldsymbol{\phi}) + b_\Gamma(\mathbf{v}_p, \mathbf{v}_f, \boldsymbol{\phi}; \overline{\lambda}_0) = 0, \end{aligned} \tag{4.49a}$$

$$-\; b_\Gamma(\overline{\mathbf{u}}_{p,0}, \overline{\mathbf{u}}_{f,0}, \overline{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_0; \xi) \;=\; 0. \tag{4.49b}$$

Taking $(\mathbf{v}_p, \mathbf{R}_f, \mathbf{v}_f, \boldsymbol{\phi}, \xi) = (\overline{\mathbf{u}}_{p,0}, \overline{\mathbf{T}}_{f,0}, \overline{\mathbf{u}}_{f,0}, \overline{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_0, \overline{\lambda}_0)$ in (4.49), using that $\mathbf{u}_{f,0} \in \mathbf{W}_r$ (cf. Lemma 4.11) and $\mathbf{u}_f(0) \in \mathbf{W}_r$, and proceeding as in (4.48), we get

$$\|\overline{\mathbf{u}}_{p,0}\|^2_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_p)} + 2C_{\mathcal{K}}\,(r_0 - r)\,\|(\overline{\mathbf{T}}_{f,0}, \overline{\mathbf{u}}_{f,0})\|^2 + |\overline{\mathbf{u}}_{f,0} - \overline{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_0|^2_{\mathtt{BJS}} \leq 0,$$

which implies that $\overline{\mathbf{u}}_{p,0} = \mathbf{0}$, $\overline{\mathbf{T}}_{f,0} = \mathbf{0}$, $\overline{\mathbf{u}}_{f,0} = \mathbf{0}$ and $\overline{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_0 \cdot \mathbf{t}_{f,j} = 0$. In addition, (4.49b) implies that $\langle \overline{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_0 \cdot \mathbf{n}_p, \xi \rangle_{\Gamma_{fp}} = 0$ for all $\xi \in \mathrm{H}^{1/2}(\Gamma_{fp})$. Since $\mathrm{H}^{1/2}(\Gamma_{fp})$ is dense in $\mathrm{L}^2(\Gamma_{fp})$, it follows that $\overline{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_0 \cdot \mathbf{n}_p = 0$; hence $\overline{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_0 = \mathbf{0}$. The inf-sup condition (3.36), together with (4.49a), implies that $\overline{\lambda}_0 = 0$. □

REMARK 4.13 As we noted in Remark 3.1, the time differentiated equation (3.6c) can be used to recover the nondifferentiated equation (3.7). In particular, recalling the initial data construction (4.39), let

$$\forall\, t \in [0, T], \quad \boldsymbol{\eta}_p(t) = \boldsymbol{\eta}_{p,0} + \int_0^t \mathbf{u}_s(s)\,\mathrm{d}s, \quad \boldsymbol{\rho}_p(t) = \boldsymbol{\rho}_{p,0} + \int_0^t \boldsymbol{\gamma}_p(s)\,\mathrm{d}s, \quad \boldsymbol{\psi}(t) = \boldsymbol{\psi}_0 + \int_0^t \boldsymbol{\theta}(s)\,\mathrm{d}s.$$

Then (3.7) follows from integrating (3.6c) from 0 to $t \in (0, T]$ and using the first equation in (4.39).

Before proving a stability bound for the solution of (3.16), we establish a bound at $t = 0$.

LEMMA 4.14 Under the assumptions of Theorem 4.12, there exists a positive constant C, independent of $s_{0,\min}$, such that

$$\big\|A^{1/2}(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p + \alpha_p p_p \mathbf{I})(0)\big\|_{\mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_p)} + \|p_p(0)\|_{\mathrm{W}_p} \leq C\,\Big(\|p_{p,0}\|_{\mathrm{H}^1(\Omega_p)} + \|\mathbf{K}\nabla p_{p,0}\|_{\mathbf{H}^1(\Omega_p)} + \|\mathbf{f}_p\|_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_p)}\Big), \tag{4.50}$$

and

$$\begin{aligned}&\big\|\partial_t A^{1/2}(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p + \alpha_p p_p \mathbf{I})(0)\big\|_{\mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_p)} + \sqrt{s_0}\,\big\|\partial_t p_p(0)\big\|_{\mathrm{W}_p} \\ &\quad \leq C\left(\frac{1}{\sqrt{s_0}}\,\|q_p(0)\|_{\mathrm{L}^2(\Omega_p)} + \left(1 + \frac{1}{\sqrt{s_0}}\right)\Big(\|p_{p,0}\|_{\mathrm{H}^1(\Omega_p)} + \|\mathbf{K}\nabla p_{p,0}\|_{\mathbf{H}^1(\Omega_p)} + \|\mathbf{f}_f\|_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_f)}\Big)\right).\end{aligned} \tag{4.51}$$

Proof. First, since $(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p(0), p_p(0)) = (\boldsymbol{\sigma}_{p,0}, p_{p,0})$, bound (4.40) gives (4.50). On the other hand, using the facts that $(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p, p_p) \in \mathrm{W}^{1,\infty}(0, T; \mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_p)) \times \mathrm{W}^{1,\infty}(0, T; \mathrm{L}^2(\Omega_p))$ and $\mathbf{f}_p$ is independent of t, we can differentiate in time (3.6d)–(3.6e) and combine them with (3.6c) and (3.6g) at time $t = 0$. Choosing $(\boldsymbol{\tau}_p, w_p, \mathbf{v}_s, \boldsymbol{\chi}_p) = (\partial_t \boldsymbol{\sigma}_p(0), \partial_t p_p(0), \mathbf{u}_s(0), \boldsymbol{\gamma}_p(0))$ implies

$$\begin{aligned}&\|\partial_t A^{1/2}(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p + \alpha_p p_p \mathbf{I})(0)\|^2_{\mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_p)} + s_0\|\partial_t p_p(0)\|^2_{\mathrm{W}_p} \\ &\quad = \langle \partial_t \boldsymbol{\sigma}_p(0)\mathbf{n}_p, \boldsymbol{\theta}(0)\rangle_{\Gamma_{fp}} + (\partial_t p_p(0), \operatorname{div}(\mathbf{u}_p)(0))_{\Omega_p} + (q_p(0), \partial_t p_p(0))_{\Omega_p}.\end{aligned} \tag{4.52}$$

Using the normal trace inequality (3.2) and estimate (4.22) to bound the first term on the right-hand side, as well as the Cauchy–Schwarz and Young's inequalities, we obtain

$$
\begin{aligned}
&\|\partial_t A^{1/2}(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p + \alpha_p p_p \mathbf{I})(0)\|^2_{\mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_p)} + s_0 \|\partial_t p_p(0)\|^2_{\mathrm{W}_p} \\
&\quad \le C\left(\|\partial_t \mathbf{div}(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p)(0)\|^2_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_p)} + \frac{1}{s_0}\|q_p(0)\|^2_{\mathrm{L}^2(\Omega_p)} + \left(1 + \frac{1}{s_0}\right)\|\boldsymbol{\theta}(0)\|^2_{\boldsymbol{\Lambda}_s} + \frac{1}{s_0}\|\mathrm{div}(\mathbf{u}_p)(0)\|^2_{\mathrm{L}^2(\Omega_p)}\right) \\
&\qquad + \delta\left(\|\partial_t A^{1/2}(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p + \alpha_p p_p \mathbf{I})(0)\|^2_{\mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_p)} + s_0 \|\partial_t p_p(0)\|^2_{\mathrm{W}_p}\right).
\end{aligned} \tag{4.53}
$$

In turn, using the fact that $\boldsymbol{\theta}(0) = \boldsymbol{\theta}_0$, $\mathbf{u}_p(0) = \mathbf{u}_{p,0}$ (cf. Theorem 4.12), bound (4.42) and the identity (4.35), we find that

$$
\begin{aligned}
\|\boldsymbol{\theta}(0)\|_{\boldsymbol{\Lambda}_s} &\le C\left(\|\mathbf{f}_f\|_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_f)} + \|p_{p,0}\|_{\mathrm{H}^1(\Omega_p)} + \|\mathbf{K}\nabla p_{p,0}\|_{\mathbf{H}^1(\Omega_p)}\right), \\
\|\mathrm{div}(\mathbf{u}_p)(0)\|_{\mathrm{L}^2(\Omega_p)} &\le C\,\|\mathrm{div}(\mathbf{K}\nabla p_{p,0})\|_{\mathrm{L}^2(\Omega_p)}.
\end{aligned} \tag{4.54}
$$

In addition, from (3.6d) and the fact that $\mathbf{f}_p$ does not depend on t, we deduce

$$
\|\partial_t \mathbf{div}(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p)(0)\|_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_p)} = 0. \tag{4.55}
$$

Then, combining (4.53) with (4.54)–(4.55), and taking δ small enough, we obtain (4.51). □

We end this section with establishing regularity and a stability bound for the solution of (3.16).

THEOREM 4.15 Under the assumptions of Theorem 4.12, if $q_p \in \mathrm{H}^1(0,T;\mathrm{L}^2(\Omega_p))$, then the solution of (3.16) has regularity $\mathbf{T}_f \in \mathrm{H}^1(0,T;\mathbb{X}_f)$, $\mathbf{u}_f \in \mathrm{H}^1(0,T;\mathbf{V}_f)$, $\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p \in \mathrm{W}^{1,\infty}(0,T;\mathbb{X}_p)$, $\mathbf{u}_s \in \mathrm{L}^\infty(0,T;\mathbf{V}_s)$, $\boldsymbol{\gamma}_p \in \mathrm{L}^\infty(0,T;\mathbb{Q}_p)$, $\mathbf{u}_p \in \mathrm{L}^2(0,T;\mathbf{V}_p) \cap \mathrm{H}^1(0,T;\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_p))$, $p_p \in \mathrm{W}^{1,\infty}(0,T;\mathrm{W}_p)$, $\lambda \in \mathrm{H}^1(0,T;\Lambda_p)$ and $\boldsymbol{\theta} \in \mathrm{L}^\infty(0,T;\boldsymbol{\Lambda}_s)$. In addition, there exists a positive constant C, independent of $s_{0,\min}$, such that

$$
\begin{aligned}
&\|A^{1/2}(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p + \alpha_p p_p \mathbf{I})\|_{\mathrm{W}^{1,\infty}(0,T;\mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_p))} + \|\mathbf{div}(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p)\|_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_p)} \\
&\quad + \sqrt{s_0}\|p_p\|_{\mathrm{W}^{1,\infty}(0,T;\mathrm{W}_p)} + \|p_p\|_{\mathrm{H}^1(0,T;\mathrm{W}_p)} + \|\mathbf{u}_p\|_{\mathrm{L}^2(0,T;\mathbf{V}_p)} + \|\partial_t \mathbf{u}_p\|_{\mathrm{L}^2(0,T;\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_p))} + \|\mathbf{T}_f\|_{\mathrm{H}^1(0,T;\mathbb{X}_f)} \\
&\quad + \|\mathbf{u}_f\|_{\mathrm{H}^1(0,T;\mathbf{V}_f)} + |\mathbf{u}_f - \boldsymbol{\theta}|_{\mathrm{H}^1(0,T;\mathrm{BJS})} + \|\boldsymbol{\theta}\|_{\mathrm{L}^\infty(0,T;\boldsymbol{\Lambda}_s)} + \|\boldsymbol{\theta}\|_{\mathrm{L}^2(0,T;\boldsymbol{\Lambda}_s)} + \|\lambda\|_{\mathrm{H}^1(0,T;\Lambda_p)} \\
&\quad + \|\mathbf{u}_s\|_{\mathrm{L}^\infty(0,T;\mathbf{V}_s)} + \|\mathbf{u}_s\|_{\mathrm{L}^2(0,T;\mathbf{V}_s)} + \|\boldsymbol{\gamma}_p\|_{\mathrm{L}^\infty(0,T;\mathbb{Q}_p)} + \|\boldsymbol{\gamma}_p\|_{\mathrm{L}^2(0,T;\mathbb{Q}_p)} \\
&\le C\left(\|\mathbf{f}_f\|_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_f)} + \|\mathbf{f}_p\|_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_p)} + \|q_p\|_{\mathrm{H}^1(0,T;\mathrm{L}^2(\Omega_p))} + \frac{1}{\sqrt{s_0}}\|q_p(0)\|_{\mathrm{L}^2(\Omega_p)} \right. \\
&\quad \left. + \sqrt{s_0}\,\|p_{p,0}\|_{\mathrm{W}_p} + \left(1 + \frac{1}{\sqrt{s_0}}\right)\left(\|p_{p,0}\|_{\mathrm{H}^1(\Omega_p)} + \|\mathbf{K}\nabla p_{p,0}\|_{\mathbf{H}^1(\Omega_p)}\right)\right).
\end{aligned} \tag{4.56}
$$

Proof. Choosing $(\boldsymbol{\tau}_p, w_p, \mathbf{v}_p, \mathbf{R}_f, \mathbf{v}_f, \boldsymbol{\phi}, \xi, \mathbf{v}_s, \boldsymbol{\chi}_p) = (\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p, p_p, \mathbf{u}_p, \mathbf{T}_f, \mathbf{u}_f, \boldsymbol{\theta}, \lambda, \mathbf{u}_s, \boldsymbol{\gamma}_p)$ in (3.16), we get

$$
\begin{aligned}
&\tfrac{1}{2}\,\partial_t\left(\|A^{1/2}(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p + \alpha_p p_p \mathbf{I})\|^2_{\mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_p)} + s_0\|p_p\|^2_{\mathrm{W}_p}\right) + a_p(\mathbf{u}_p,\mathbf{u}_p) + a_f(\mathbf{T}_f,\mathbf{u}_f;\mathbf{T}_f,\mathbf{u}_f) \\
&\quad + \kappa_{\mathbf{u}_f}(\mathbf{T}_f,\mathbf{u}_f;\mathbf{T}_f,\mathbf{u}_f) + a_{\mathrm{BJS}}(\mathbf{u}_f,\boldsymbol{\theta};\mathbf{u}_f,\boldsymbol{\theta}) = (q_p,p_p)_{\Omega_p} + (\mathbf{f}_f, \mathbf{u}_f - \kappa_1 \mathbf{div}(\mathbf{T}_f))_{\Omega_f} + (\mathbf{f}_p,\mathbf{u}_s)_{\Omega_p}.
\end{aligned} \tag{4.57}
$$

We integrate (4.57) from 0 to $t \in (0, T]$ and use the fact that $\mathbf{u}_f : [0, T] \to \mathbf{W}_r$ (cf. (3.27)), the stability bounds (3.29) and (3.30) in Lemma 3.3 and the Cauchy–Schwarz and Young's inequalities, to deduce

$$\|A^{1/2}(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p + \alpha_p p_p \mathbf{I})(t)\|^2_{\mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_p)} + s_0 \|p_p(t)\|^2_{\mathrm{W}_p} + \int_0^t \left(\|\mathbf{u}_p\|^2_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_p)} + \|(\mathbf{T}_f, \mathbf{u}_f)\|^2 + |\mathbf{u}_f - \boldsymbol{\theta}|^2_{\mathrm{BJS}} \right) \mathrm{d}s$$
$$\leq C \left(\|\mathbf{f}_f\|^2_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_f)} + \|\mathbf{f}_p\|^2_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_p)} + \int_0^t \|q_p\|^2_{\mathrm{L}^2(\Omega_p)} \mathrm{d}s + \|A^{1/2}(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p + \alpha_p p_p \mathbf{I})(0)\|^2_{\mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_p)} + s_0 \|p_p(0)\|^2_{\mathrm{W}_p} \right)$$
$$+ \delta \int_0^t \left(\|(\mathbf{T}_f, \mathbf{u}_f)\|^2 + \|p_p\|^2_{\mathrm{W}_p} + \|\mathbf{u}_s\|^2_{\mathbf{V}_s} \right) \mathrm{d}s \,. \tag{4.58}$$

In turn, taking $(\boldsymbol{\tau}_p, w_p, \mathbf{v}_p, \mathbf{R}_f, \mathbf{v}_f, \boldsymbol{\phi}) = (\boldsymbol{\tau}_p, 0, \mathbf{v}_p, \mathbf{0}, \mathbf{0}, \mathbf{0})$ in the first equation of (3.16), we obtain

$$b_s(\mathbf{u}_s, \boldsymbol{\tau}_p) + b_{\mathrm{sk}}(\boldsymbol{\gamma}_p, \boldsymbol{\tau}_p) - b_{\mathbf{n}_p}(\boldsymbol{\tau}_p, \boldsymbol{\theta}) + b_p(p_p, \mathbf{v}_p) + b_\Gamma(\mathbf{0}, \mathbf{v}_p, \mathbf{0}; \lambda)$$
$$= -a_e(\partial_t \boldsymbol{\sigma}_p, \partial_t p_p; \boldsymbol{\tau}_p, 0) - a_p(\mathbf{u}_p, \mathbf{v}_p),$$

which, combined with the inf-sup conditions (3.35)–(3.36) in Lemma 3.5, yields

$$\|\mathbf{u}_s\|_{\mathbf{V}_s} + \|\boldsymbol{\gamma}_p\|_{\mathbb{Q}_p} + \|\boldsymbol{\theta}\|_{\boldsymbol{\Lambda}_s} + \|p_p\|_{\mathrm{W}_p} + \|\lambda\|_{\Lambda_p} \leq C \left(\|\partial_t A^{1/2}(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p + \alpha_p p_p \mathbf{I})\|_{\mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_p)} + \|\mathbf{u}_p\|_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_p)} \right). \tag{4.59}$$

On the other hand, choosing $\mathbf{v}_s = \mathbf{div}(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p)$ and $w_p = \mathrm{div}(\mathbf{u}_p)$ in (3.16), and applying the Cauchy–Schwarz inequality, we deduce that

$$\|\mathbf{div}(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p)\|_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_p)} \leq \|\mathbf{f}_p\|_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_p)}, \quad \text{and}$$
$$\|\mathrm{div}(\mathbf{u}_p)\|_{\mathrm{L}^2(\Omega_p)} \leq C \left(\|q_p\|_{\mathrm{L}^2(\Omega_p)} + \|\partial_t A^{1/2}(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p + \alpha_p p_p \mathbf{I})\|_{\mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_p)} + s_0 \|\partial_t p_p\|_{\mathrm{W}_p} \right). \tag{4.60}$$

Then, combining (4.58) with (4.59) and (4.60), and choosing δ small enough, we obtain

$$\|A^{1/2}(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p + \alpha_p p_p \mathbf{I})(t)\|^2_{\mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_p)} + s_0 \|p_p(t)\|^2_{\mathrm{W}_p} + \|\mathbf{div}(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p)\|^2_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_p)}$$
$$+ \int_0^t \left(\|p_p\|^2_{\mathrm{W}_p} + \|\mathbf{u}_p\|^2_{\mathbf{V}_p} + \|(\mathbf{T}_f, \mathbf{u}_f)\|^2 + |\mathbf{u}_f - \boldsymbol{\theta}|^2_{\mathrm{BJS}} + \|\boldsymbol{\theta}\|^2_{\boldsymbol{\Lambda}_s} + \|\lambda\|^2_{\Lambda_p} + \|\mathbf{u}_s\|^2_{\mathbf{V}_s} + \|\boldsymbol{\gamma}_p\|^2_{\mathbb{Q}_p} \right) \mathrm{d}s$$
$$\leq C \left(\|\mathbf{f}_f\|^2_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_f)} + \|\mathbf{f}_p\|^2_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_p)} + \int_0^t \|q_p\|^2_{\mathrm{L}^2(\Omega_p)} \mathrm{d}s + \|A^{1/2}(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p + \alpha_p p_p \mathbf{I})(0)\|^2_{\mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_p)} \right.$$
$$\left. + s_0 \|p_p(0)\|^2_{\mathrm{W}_p} + \int_0^t \left(\|\partial_t A^{1/2}(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p + \alpha_p p_p \mathbf{I})\|^2_{\mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_p)} + s_0^2 \|\partial_t p_p\|^2_{\mathrm{W}_p} \right) \mathrm{d}s \right). \tag{4.61}$$

Next, in order to bound the last two terms in (4.61), we take a finite difference in time of the whole system (3.16). In particular, given $t \in [0, T)$ and $s > 0$ with $t + s \leq T$, let $\partial_t^s \phi := \frac{\phi(t+s) - \phi(t)}{s}$. Applying this operator to (3.16), noting that $\partial_t^s \mathbf{f}_f = \mathbf{0}$ and $\partial_t^s \mathbf{f}_p = \mathbf{0}$ since both $\mathbf{f}_f$ and $\mathbf{f}_p$ are independent of t, and testing with $(\boldsymbol{\tau}_p, w_p, \mathbf{v}_p, \mathbf{R}_f, \mathbf{v}_f, \boldsymbol{\phi}, \xi, \mathbf{v}_s, \boldsymbol{\chi}_p) = (\partial_t^s \boldsymbol{\sigma}_p, \partial_t^s p_p, \partial_t^s \mathbf{u}_p, \partial_t^s \mathbf{T}_f, \partial_t^s \mathbf{u}_f, \partial_t^s \boldsymbol{\theta}, \partial_t^s \lambda, \partial_t^s \mathbf{u}_s, \partial_t^s \boldsymbol{\gamma}_p)$, similarly to (4.57), we get

$$\frac{1}{2}\,\partial_t\big(\|\partial_t^s A^{1/2}(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p+\alpha_p p_p\mathbf{I})\|^2_{\mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_p)}+s_0\|\partial_t^s p_p\|^2_{\mathrm{W}_p}\big)+a_p(\partial_t^s\mathbf{u}_p,\partial_t^s\mathbf{u}_p)+a_f(\partial_t^s\mathbf{T}_f,\partial_t^s\mathbf{u}_f;\partial_t^s\mathbf{T}_f,\partial_t^s\mathbf{u}_f)$$
$$+\kappa_{\partial_t^s\mathbf{u}_f}(\mathbf{T}_f(t),\mathbf{u}_f(t);\partial_t^s\mathbf{T}_f,\partial_t^s\mathbf{u}_f)+\kappa_{\mathbf{u}_f(t+s)}(\partial_t^s\mathbf{T}_f,\partial_t^s\mathbf{u}_f;\partial_t^s\mathbf{T}_f,\partial_t^s\mathbf{u}_f)+a_{\mathrm{BJS}}(\partial_t^s\mathbf{u}_f,\partial_t^s\boldsymbol{\theta};\partial_t^s\mathbf{u}_f,\partial_t^s\boldsymbol{\theta})$$
$$=\,(\partial_t^s q_p,\partial_t^s p_p)_{\Omega_p}.$$

We integrate from 0 to $t\in(0,T)$, use that $\mathbf{u}_f:[0,T]\to\mathbf{W}_r$, the continuity of $\kappa_{\mathbf{w}_f}$ (cf. (3.20)) and the positivity bounds of a_p, a_f and a_{BJS} in Lemma 3.3 (cf. (3.33) and (3.34)) and take $s\to 0$, obtaining

$$\begin{aligned}
&\|\partial_t A^{1/2}(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p+\alpha_p p_p\mathbf{I})(t)\|^2_{\mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_p)}+s_0\|\partial_t p_p(t)\|^2_{\mathrm{W}_p}\\
&\quad+\int_0^t\Big(\|\partial_t\mathbf{u}_p\|^2_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_p)}+2C_{\mathcal{K}}\,(r_0-r)\|(\partial_t\mathbf{T}_f,\partial_t\mathbf{u}_f)\|^2+|\partial_t\mathbf{u}_f-\partial_t\boldsymbol{\theta}|^2_{\mathrm{BJS}}\Big)\,\mathrm{d}s\\
&\quad\le C\bigg(\int_0^t\|\partial_t q_p\|^2_{\mathrm{L}^2(\Omega_p)}\,\mathrm{d}s+\|\partial_t A^{1/2}(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p+\alpha_p p_p\mathbf{I})(0)\|^2_{\mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_p)}+s_0\,\|\partial_t p_p(0)\|^2_{\mathrm{W}_p}\bigg)\\
&\quad+\delta\int_0^t\|\partial_t p_p\|^2_{\mathrm{W}_p}\,\mathrm{d}s.
\end{aligned}\tag{4.62}$$

In turn, using the inf-sup conditions (3.35)–(3.36) in Lemma 3.5, we find that for a.e. $t\in(0,T)$

$$\begin{aligned}
\|\mathbf{u}_s(t)\|_{\mathbf{V}_s}+\|\boldsymbol{\gamma}_p(t)\|_{\mathbb{Q}_p}+\|\boldsymbol{\theta}(t)\|_{\boldsymbol{\Lambda}_s}&\le C\,\|\partial_t A^{1/2}(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p+\alpha_p\,p_p\,\mathbf{I})(t)\|_{\mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_p)},\\
\text{and}\quad \|\partial_t p_p(t)\|_{\mathrm{W}_p}+\|\partial_t\lambda(t)\|_{\Lambda_p}&\le C\,\|\partial_t\,\mathbf{u}_p(t)\|_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_p)},
\end{aligned}\tag{4.63}$$

where the second bound is obtained by applying the operator ∂_t^s and taking $s\to 0$. Then, combining (4.62) with (4.63), and taking δ small enough, yields

$$\begin{aligned}
&\|\partial_t A^{1/2}(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p+\alpha_p p_p\mathbf{I})(t)\|^2_{\mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_p)}+s_0\|\partial_t p_p(t)\|^2_{\mathrm{W}_p}+\|\mathbf{u}_s(t)\|^2_{\mathbf{V}_s}+\|\boldsymbol{\gamma}_p(t)\|^2_{\mathbb{Q}_p}+\|\boldsymbol{\theta}(t)\|^2_{\boldsymbol{\Lambda}_s}\\
&\quad+\int_0^t\Big(\|\partial_t p_p\|^2_{\mathrm{W}_p}+\|\partial_t\mathbf{u}_p\|^2_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_p)}+\|(\partial_t\mathbf{T}_f,\partial_t\mathbf{u}_f)\|^2+|\partial_t\mathbf{u}_f-\partial_t\boldsymbol{\theta}|^2_{\mathrm{BJS}}+\|\partial_t\lambda\|^2_{\Lambda_p}\Big)\,\mathrm{d}s\\
&\le C\left(\int_0^t\|\partial_t q_p\|^2_{\mathrm{L}^2(\Omega_p)}\,\mathrm{d}s+\|\partial_t A^{1/2}(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p+\alpha_p p_p\mathbf{I})(0)\|^2_{\mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_p)}+s_0\,\|\partial_t p_p(0)\|^2_{\mathrm{W}_p}\right).
\end{aligned}\tag{4.64}$$

Bound (4.56) follows by combining (4.61) and (4.64) with the bounds at $t=0$ (4.50)–(4.51). The bound implies the stated solution regularity. □

5. Semidiscrete continuous-in-time approximation

In this section, we introduce and analyze the semidiscrete continuous-in-time approximation of (3.17). We analyze its solvability by employing the strategy developed in Section 4. In addition, we derive error estimates with rates of convergence. At the end of the section, we introduce the fully discrete scheme based on the backward Euler time discretization.

Let $\mathcal{T}_h^f$ and $\mathcal{T}_h^p$ be shape-regular and quasi-uniform (Ciarlet, 1978) affine finite element partitions of Ω_f and Ω_p, respectively, where h is the maximum element diameter. The two partitions may be nonmatching along the interface Γ_{fp}. For the discretization, we consider the following conforming finite element spaces:

$$\mathbb{X}_{fh} \times \mathbf{V}_{fh} \subset \mathbb{X}_f \times \mathbf{V}_f, \quad \mathbb{X}_{ph} \times \mathbf{V}_{sh} \times \mathbb{Q}_{ph} \subset \mathbb{X}_p \times \mathbf{V}_s \times \mathbb{Q}_p, \quad \mathbf{V}_{ph} \times \mathrm{W}_{ph} \subset \mathbf{V}_p \times \mathrm{W}_p.$$

We choose $(\mathbb{X}_{ph}, \mathbf{V}_{sh}, \mathbb{Q}_{ph})$ to be any stable triple for mixed elasticity with weakly imposed stress symmetry, such as the Amara–Thomas (Amara & Thomas, 1979), PEERS (Arnold *et al.*, 1984), Stenberg (Stenberg, 1988), Arnold–Falk–Winther (Arnold *et al.*, 2007; Awanou, 2013) or Cockburn–Gopalakrishnan–Guzman (Cockburn *et al.*, 2010) families of spaces. We take $(\mathbf{V}_{ph}, \mathrm{W}_{ph})$ to be any stable mixed finite element Darcy spaces, such as the Raviart–Thomas (RT) or Brezzi–Douglas–Marini (BDM) spaces Brezzi & Fortin (1991). We note that these spaces satisfy

$$\mathbf{div}(\mathbb{X}_{ph}) = \mathbf{V}_{sh}, \qquad \mathrm{div}(\mathbf{V}_{ph}) = \mathrm{W}_{ph}. \tag{5.1}$$

Since $\mathbf{V}_{sh}$ and W_{ph} contain discontinuous piecewise polynomials, the method exhibits local poroelastic momentum conservation (cf. (3.6d)) and local mass conservation for the Darcy fluid (cf. (3.6g)). We further note that an inf-sup condition is not required for the pair $(\mathbb{X}_{fh}, \mathbf{V}_{fh})$. Therefore, we can take any $\mathbb{H}(\mathbf{div}; \Omega_f)$-conforming space for $\mathbb{X}_{fh}$, such as the RT or BDM spaces, combined with continuous piecewise polynomials for $\mathbf{V}_{fh}$. For the Lagrange multipliers, we choose the nonconforming approximations

$$\Lambda_{ph} := \mathbf{V}_{ph} \cdot \mathbf{n}_p|_{\Gamma_{fp}}, \quad \boldsymbol{\Lambda}_{sh} := \mathbb{X}_{ph}\mathbf{n}_p|_{\Gamma_{fp}}, \tag{5.2}$$

which consist of discontinuous piecewise polynomials and are equipped with L^2-norms.

REMARK 5.1 We note that, since $\mathrm{H}^{1/2}(\Gamma_{fp})$ is dense in $\mathrm{L}^2(\Gamma_{fp})$, (3.6h) and (3.6i) in the continuous weak formulation hold for test functions in $\mathrm{L}^2(\Gamma_{fp})$, assuming that the solution is smooth enough so that the traces are well-defined in $\mathrm{L}^2(\Gamma_{fp})$; e.g., $\mathbf{u}_p \in \mathbf{H}^{1/2+\epsilon}(\Omega_p)$ for some $\epsilon > 0$. In particular, these equations hold for $\xi_h \in \Lambda_{ph}$ and $\boldsymbol{\phi}_h \in \boldsymbol{\Lambda}_{sh}$, respectively.

Now, we group the spaces, unknowns and test functions similarly to the continuous case:

$$\mathbf{Q}_h := \mathbb{X}_{ph} \times \mathrm{W}_{ph} \times \mathbf{V}_{ph} \times \mathbb{X}_{fh} \times \mathbf{V}_{fh} \times \boldsymbol{\Lambda}_{sh}, \quad \mathbf{S}_h := \Lambda_{ph} \times \mathbf{V}_{sh} \times \mathbb{Q}_{ph},$$
$$\mathbf{p}_h := (\boldsymbol{\sigma}_{ph}, p_{ph}, \mathbf{u}_{ph}, \mathbf{T}_{fh}, \mathbf{u}_{fh}, \boldsymbol{\theta}_h) \in \mathbf{Q}_h, \quad \mathbf{r}_h := (\lambda_h, \mathbf{u}_{sh}, \boldsymbol{\gamma}_{ph}) \in \mathbf{S}_h,$$
$$\mathbf{q}_h := (\boldsymbol{\tau}_{ph}, w_{ph}, \mathbf{v}_{ph}, \mathbf{R}_{fh}, \mathbf{v}_{fh}, \boldsymbol{\phi}_h) \in \mathbf{Q}_h, \quad \mathbf{s}_h := (\xi_h, \mathbf{v}_{sh}, \boldsymbol{\chi}_{ph}) \in \mathbf{S}_h,$$

where the spaces $\mathbf{Q}$ and $\mathbf{S}$ are respectively endowed with the norms

$$\|\mathbf{q}_h\|^2_{\mathbf{Q}_h} = \|\boldsymbol{\tau}_{ph}\|^2_{\mathbb{X}_p} + \|w_{ph}\|^2_{\mathrm{W}_p} + \|\mathbf{v}_{ph}\|^2_{\mathbf{V}_p} + \|\mathbf{R}_{fh}\|^2_{\mathbb{X}_f} + \|\mathbf{v}_{fh}\|^2_{\mathbf{V}_f} + \|\boldsymbol{\phi}_h\|^2_{\boldsymbol{\Lambda}_{sh}},$$
$$\|\mathbf{s}_h\|^2_{\mathbf{S}_h} = \|\xi_h\|^2_{\Lambda_{ph}} + \|\mathbf{v}_{sh}\|^2_{\mathbf{V}_p} + \|\boldsymbol{\chi}_{ph}\|^2_{\mathbb{Q}_p},$$

with $\|\boldsymbol{\phi}_h\|_{\boldsymbol{\Lambda}_{sh}} = \|\boldsymbol{\phi}_h\|_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Gamma_{fp})}$ and $\|\xi_h\|_{\Lambda_{ph}} = \|\xi_h\|_{\mathrm{L}^2(\Gamma_{fp})}$. The semidiscrete continuous-in-time approximation to (3.17) is: find $(\mathbf{p}_h, \mathbf{r}_h) : [0, T] \to \mathbf{Q}_h \times \mathbf{S}_h$ such that for a.e. $t \in (0, T)$,

$$\frac{\partial}{\partial t}\,\mathcal{E}(\mathbf{p}_h(t)) + (\mathcal{A} + \mathcal{K}_{\mathbf{u}_{fh}(t)})(\mathbf{p}_h(t)) + \mathcal{B}'(\mathbf{r}_h(t)) = \mathbf{F}(t) \quad \text{in} \quad \mathbf{Q}_h',$$
$$-\mathcal{B}(\mathbf{p}_h(t)) = \mathbf{G} \quad \text{in} \quad \mathbf{S}_h'. \tag{5.3}$$

REMARK 5.2 Lemma 3.2 holds for the nonconforming Lagrange multipliers spaces (cf. (5.2)), even though the trace inequalities (3.1) and (3.2) no longer hold. In particular, for the continuity of the bilinear forms $b_{\mathbf{n}_p}(\boldsymbol{\tau}_{ph}, \boldsymbol{\phi}_h)$ and $b_\Gamma(\mathbf{v}_{fh}, \mathbf{v}_{ph}, \boldsymbol{\phi}_h; \xi_h)$, using the discrete trace-inverse inequality for piecewise polynomial functions, $\|\varphi\|_{\mathrm{L}^2(\Gamma_{fp})} \le C h^{-1/2}\|\varphi\|_{\mathrm{L}^2(\Omega_p)}$, we have

$$b_{\mathbf{n}_p}(\boldsymbol{\tau}_{ph}, \boldsymbol{\phi}_h) \le C h^{-1/2}\|\boldsymbol{\tau}_{ph}\|_{\mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_p)}\|\boldsymbol{\phi}_h\|_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Gamma_{fp})},$$

$$b_\Gamma(\mathbf{v}_{fh}, \mathbf{v}_{ph}, \boldsymbol{\phi}_h; \xi_h) \le C\left(\|\mathbf{v}_{fh}\|_{\mathbf{V}_f} + h^{-1/2}\|\mathbf{v}_{ph}\|_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_p)} + \|\boldsymbol{\phi}_h\|_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Gamma_{fp})}\right)\|\xi_h\|_{\mathrm{L}^2(\Gamma_{fp})}.$$

Therefore, these bilinear forms are continuous for any given mesh and so are the operators $\mathcal{A}$ and $\mathcal{B}$; hence Lemma 3.2 holds.

We next state the discrete inf-sup conditions that are satisfied by the finite element spaces.

LEMMA 5.3 There exists constants $\widetilde{\beta}_1, \widetilde{\beta}_2 > 0$ such that for all $(\mathbf{v}_{sh}, \boldsymbol{\chi}_{ph}, \boldsymbol{\phi}_h) \in \mathbf{V}_{sh} \times \mathbb{Q}_{ph} \times \boldsymbol{\Lambda}_{sh}$,

$$\widetilde{\beta}_1\left(\|\mathbf{v}_{sh}\|_{\mathbf{V}_s} + \|\boldsymbol{\chi}_{ph}\|_{\mathbb{Q}_p} + \|\boldsymbol{\phi}_h\|_{\boldsymbol{\Lambda}_{sh}}\right) \le \sup_{\mathbf{0}\neq\boldsymbol{\tau}_{ph}\in\mathbb{X}_{ph}} \frac{b_s(\boldsymbol{\tau}_{ph}, \mathbf{v}_{sh}) + b_{\mathrm{sk}}(\boldsymbol{\tau}_{ph}, \boldsymbol{\chi}_{ph}) + b_{\mathbf{n}_p}(\boldsymbol{\tau}_{ph}, \boldsymbol{\phi}_p)}{\|\boldsymbol{\tau}_{ph}\|_{\mathbb{X}_p}}, \tag{5.4}$$

and for all $(w_{ph}, \xi_h) \in \mathrm{W}_{ph} \times \Lambda_{ph}$,

$$\widetilde{\beta}_2\left(\|w_{ph}\|_{\mathrm{W}_p} + \|\xi_h\|_{\Lambda_{ph}}\right) \le \sup_{\mathbf{0}\neq\mathbf{v}_{ph}\in\mathbf{V}_{ph}} \frac{b_p(\mathbf{v}_{ph}, w_{ph}) + b_\Gamma(\mathbf{v}_{ph}, \mathbf{0}, \mathbf{0}; \xi_h)}{\|\mathbf{v}_{ph}\|_{\mathbf{V}_p}}. \tag{5.5}$$

Proof. Inequality (5.4) can be shown using the arguments developed in Ambartsumyan *et al.* (2020a, Theorem 4.1), whereas (5.5) can be proved similarly to Ambartsumyan *et al.* (2019a, eq. (5.7) and Lemma 5.1). □

5.1 *Existence and uniqueness of a solution*

The existence of a solution to (5.3) will be established following the proof of solvability of the continuous formulation (3.16) developed in Section 4. To this end, we define a discrete version of the domain $\mathcal{D}$:

$$\mathcal{D}_h := \Big\{(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_{ph}, p_{ph}) \in \mathbb{X}_{ph} \times \mathrm{W}_{ph} : \text{ for given } (\mathbf{f}_f, \mathbf{f}_p) \in \mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_f) \times \mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_p), \text{ there exist}$$

$$((\mathbf{u}_{ph}, \mathbf{T}_{fh}, \mathbf{u}_{fh}, \boldsymbol{\theta}_h), (\lambda_h, \mathbf{u}_{sh}, \boldsymbol{\gamma}_{ph})) \in (\mathbf{V}_{ph} \times \mathbb{X}_{fh} \times \mathbf{V}_{fh} \times \boldsymbol{\Lambda}_{sh}) \times \mathbf{S}_h \text{ with } \mathbf{u}_{fh} \in \mathbf{W}_r, \text{ such that}$$

$$\begin{aligned}(\mathcal{E} + \mathcal{A} + \mathcal{K}_{\mathbf{u}_{fh}})(\mathbf{p}_h) + \mathcal{B}'(\mathbf{r}_h) &= \widehat{\mathbf{F}}_h \text{ in } \mathbf{Q}_h', \\ -\mathcal{B}(\mathbf{p}_h) &= \mathbf{G} \text{ in } \mathbf{S}_h',\end{aligned} \tag{5.6}$$

where

$$\widehat{\mathbf{F}}_h(\mathbf{q}_h) = (\widehat{\mathbf{f}}_{ph}, \boldsymbol{\tau}_{ph})_{\Omega_p} + (\widehat{q}_{ph}, w_{ph})_{\Omega_p} + (\mathbf{f}_f, \mathbf{v}_{fh} - \kappa_1 \,\mathbf{div}(\mathbf{R}_{fh}))_{\Omega_f} \quad \forall\, \mathbf{q}_h \in \mathbf{Q}_h,$$

for some $(\widehat{\mathbf{f}}_{ph}, \widehat{q}_{ph}) \in E_b'$ satisfying

$$\|\widehat{\mathbf{f}}_{ph}\|_{\mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_p)} + \|\widehat{q}_{ph}\|_{\mathrm{L}^2(\Omega_p)} \le \widehat{C}_{ep,h} \left(\|\mathbf{f}_f\|_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_f)} + \|\mathbf{f}_p\|_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_p)}\right) \tag{5.7}$$

with $\widehat{C}_{ep,h}$ a fixed positive constant $\Big\}$.

The constant $\widehat{C}_{ep,h}$ is determined from the construction of compatible discrete initial data $(\mathbf{p}_{h,0}, \mathbf{r}_{h,0})$, which is discussed next.

Lemma 5.4 Let $(\mathbf{f}_f, \mathbf{f}_p) \in \mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_f) \times \mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_p)$. Assume that the conditions of Lemma 3.3 and Lemma 4.11 are satisfied. Assume in addition that the data satisfy

$$C_{\widetilde{\mathcal{J}}_0} \left(\|\mathbf{f}_f\|_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_f)} + \|p_{p,0}\|_{\mathrm{H}^1(\Omega_p)} + \|\mathbf{K}\nabla p_{p,0}\|_{\mathbf{H}^1(\Omega_p)}\right) \le r, \tag{5.8}$$

for $r \in (0, r_0)$, where r_0 is defined in (3.28) and $C_{\widetilde{\mathcal{J}}_0}$ is defined in (5.14) below. Then, there exist discrete initial data $(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_{ph,0}, p_{ph,0}) \in \mathcal{D}_h$. In particular, there exist $\mathbf{p}_{h,0} := (\boldsymbol{\sigma}_{ph,0}, p_{ph,0}, \mathbf{u}_{ph,0}, \mathbf{T}_{fh,0}, \mathbf{u}_{fh,0}, \boldsymbol{\theta}_{h,0}) \in \mathbf{Q}_h$ and $\mathbf{r}_{h,0} := (\lambda_{h,0}, \mathbf{u}_{sh,0}, \boldsymbol{\gamma}_{ph,0}) \in \mathbf{S}_h$ with $\mathbf{u}_{fh,0} \in \mathbf{W}_r$, satisfying

$$\begin{aligned}(\mathcal{E} + \mathcal{A} + \mathcal{K}_{\mathbf{u}_{fh,0}})(\mathbf{p}_{h,0}) + \mathcal{B}'(\mathbf{r}_{h,0}) &= \widehat{\mathbf{F}}_{h,0} \text{ in } \mathbf{Q}_h', \\ -\mathcal{B}(\mathbf{p}_{h,0}) &= \mathbf{G}_0 \text{ in } \mathbf{S}_h',\end{aligned} \tag{5.9}$$

where $\mathbf{G}_0(\mathbf{s}_h) := (\mathbf{f}_p, \mathbf{v}_{sh})_{\Omega_p}\ \forall\, \mathbf{s}_h \in \mathbf{S}_h$ and $\widehat{\mathbf{F}}_{h,0}(\mathbf{q}_h) = (\mathbf{f}_f, \mathbf{v}_{fh} - \kappa_1 \,\mathbf{div}(\mathbf{R}_{fh}))_{\Omega_f} + (\widehat{\mathbf{f}}_{ph,0}, \boldsymbol{\tau}_{ph})_{\Omega_p} + (\widehat{q}_{ph,0}, w_{ph})_{\Omega_p}\ \forall\, \mathbf{q}_h \in \mathbf{Q}_h$ for some $(\widehat{\mathbf{f}}_{ph,0}, \widehat{q}_{ph,0}) \in E_b'$, satisfying

$$\|\widehat{\mathbf{f}}_{ph,0}\|_{\mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_p)} + \|\widehat{q}_{ph,0}\|_{\mathrm{L}^2(\Omega_p)} \le \widehat{C}_{ep,h} \left(\|\mathbf{f}_f\|_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_f)} + \|\mathbf{f}_p\|_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_p)}\right), \tag{5.10}$$

where $\widehat{C}_{ep,h}$ is specified in (5.20) below.

Proof. The construction is based on a modification of the step-by-step procedure for the continuous initial data $(\mathbf{p}_0, \mathbf{r}_0)$ presented in Lemma 4.11. In each step, the discrete initial data is defined as a suitable projection of the continuous initial data.

1. Define $\boldsymbol{\theta}_{h,0} := P_h^{\boldsymbol{\Lambda}_s}(\boldsymbol{\theta}_0)$, where $P_h^{\boldsymbol{\Lambda}_s} : \boldsymbol{\Lambda}_s \to \boldsymbol{\Lambda}_{sh}$ is the L^2-projection operator, satisfying, $\forall\, \boldsymbol{\phi} \in \mathbf{L}^2(\Gamma_{fp})$,

$$\langle \boldsymbol{\phi} - P_h^{\boldsymbol{\Lambda}_s}(\boldsymbol{\phi}), \boldsymbol{\phi}_h \rangle_{\Gamma_{fp}} = 0 \qquad \forall\, \boldsymbol{\phi}_h \in \boldsymbol{\Lambda}_{sh}. \tag{5.11}$$

It holds that

$$\|\boldsymbol{\theta}_{h,0}\|_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Gamma_{fp})} \leq \|\boldsymbol{\theta}_0\|_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Gamma_{fp})}. \tag{5.12}$$

2. Define $(\mathbf{T}_{fh,0}, \mathbf{u}_{fh,0}, \mathbf{u}_{ph,0}, p_{ph,0}, \lambda_{h,0}) \in \mathbb{X}_{fh} \times \mathbf{V}_{fh} \times \mathbf{V}_{ph} \times \mathrm{W}_{ph} \times \Lambda_{ph}$ associated to the problem

$$\begin{aligned}
&a_f(\mathbf{T}_{fh,0}, \mathbf{u}_{fh,0}; \mathbf{R}_{fh}, \mathbf{v}_{fh}) + \kappa_{\mathbf{u}_{fh,0}}(\mathbf{T}_{fh,0}, \mathbf{u}_{fh,0}; \mathbf{R}_{fh}, \mathbf{v}_{fh}) \\
&\quad + \mu\, \alpha_{BJS} \sum_{j=1}^{n-1} \langle \sqrt{\mathbf{K}_j^{-1}} (\mathbf{u}_{fh,0} - \boldsymbol{\theta}_{h,0}) \cdot \mathbf{t}_{f,j}, \mathbf{v}_{fh} \cdot \mathbf{t}_{f,j} \rangle_{\Gamma_{fp}} + \langle \mathbf{v}_{fh} \cdot \mathbf{n}_f, \lambda_{h,0} \rangle_{\Gamma_{fp}} \\
&= a_f(\mathbf{T}_{f,0}, \mathbf{u}_{f,0}; \mathbf{R}_{fh}, \mathbf{v}_{fh}) + \kappa_{\mathbf{u}_{f,0}}(\mathbf{T}_{f,0}, \mathbf{u}_{f,0}; \mathbf{R}_{fh}, \mathbf{v}_{fh}) \\
&\quad + \mu\, \alpha_{BJS} \sum_{j=1}^{n-1} \langle \sqrt{\mathbf{K}_j^{-1}} (\mathbf{u}_{f,0} - \boldsymbol{\theta}_0) \cdot \mathbf{t}_{f,j}, \mathbf{v}_{fh} \cdot \mathbf{t}_{f,j} \rangle_{\Gamma_{fp}} + \langle \mathbf{v}_{fh} \cdot \mathbf{n}_f, \lambda_0 \rangle_{\Gamma_{fp}} \\
&= (\mathbf{f}_f, \mathbf{v}_{fh} - \kappa_1 \mathbf{div}(\mathbf{R}_{fh}))_{\Omega_f}, \\
&a_p(\mathbf{u}_{ph,0}, \mathbf{v}_{ph}) + b_p(p_{ph,0}, \mathbf{v}_{ph}) + \langle \mathbf{v}_{ph} \cdot \mathbf{n}_p, \lambda_{h,0} \rangle_{\Gamma_{fp}} = a_p(\mathbf{u}_{p,0}, \mathbf{v}_{ph}) + b_p(p_{p,0}, \mathbf{v}_{ph}) + \langle \mathbf{v}_{ph} \cdot \mathbf{n}_p, \lambda_0 \rangle_{\Gamma_{fp}} = 0, \\
&- b_p(w_{ph}, \mathbf{u}_{ph,0}) = -b_p(w_{ph}, \mathbf{u}_{p,0}) = -\frac{1}{\mu} (\mathrm{div}(\mathbf{K} \nabla p_{p,0}), w_{ph})_{\Omega_p}, \\
&- \langle \mathbf{u}_{fh,0} \cdot \mathbf{n}_f + (\boldsymbol{\theta}_{h,0} + \mathbf{u}_{ph,0}) \cdot \mathbf{n}_p, \xi_h \rangle_{\Gamma_{fp}} = -\langle \mathbf{u}_{f,0} \cdot \mathbf{n}_f + (\boldsymbol{\theta}_0 + \mathbf{u}_{p,0}) \cdot \mathbf{n}_p, \xi_h \rangle_{\Gamma_{fp}} = 0,
\end{aligned} \tag{5.13}$$

for all $\mathbf{R}_{fh} \in \mathbb{X}_{fh}, \mathbf{v}_{fh} \in \mathbf{V}_{fh}, \mathbf{v}_{ph} \in \mathbf{V}_{ph}, w_p \in \mathrm{W}_{ph}, \xi_h \in \Lambda_{ph}$. Notice that (5.13) is well-posed, since it corresponds to the weak solution of the augmented mixed formulation for the Navier–Stokes/Darcy coupled problem (see Gatica *et al.*, 2020, for a similar approach). Note that $\boldsymbol{\theta}_{h,0}$ is datum for this problem. The well-posedness of (5.13) follows from a fixed point approach as in (4.11) combined with the *a priori* estimate

$$\begin{aligned}
&\|\mathbf{T}_{fh,0}\|_{\mathbb{X}_f} + \|\mathbf{u}_{fh,0}\|_{\mathbf{V}_f} + \|\mathbf{u}_{ph,0}\|_{\mathbf{V}_p} + \|p_{ph,0}\|_{\mathrm{W}_p} + \|\lambda_{h,0}\|_{\Lambda_{ph}} \\
&\qquad \leq C_{\widetilde{\mathcal{J}}_0} \left(\|\mathbf{f}_f\|_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_f)} + \|p_{p,0}\|_{\mathrm{H}^1(\Omega_p)} + \|\mathbf{K} \nabla p_{p,0}\|_{\mathbf{H}^1(\Omega_p)} \right)
\end{aligned} \tag{5.14}$$

and the data assumption (5.8). In the above estimate, we have used (5.12) and (4.42). We note that (5.8) and (5.14) imply that $\mathbf{u}_{fh,0} \in \mathbf{W}_r$.

3. Define $(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_{ph,0}, \boldsymbol{\eta}_{ph,0}, \boldsymbol{\rho}_{ph,0}, \boldsymbol{\psi}_{h,0}) \in \mathbb{X}_{ph} \times \mathbf{V}_{sh} \times \mathbb{Q}_{ph} \times \boldsymbol{\Lambda}_{sh}$ as the unique solution of the problem

$$\begin{aligned}
&(A(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_{ph,0}), \boldsymbol{\tau}_{ph})_{\Omega_p} + b_s(\boldsymbol{\eta}_{ph,0}, \boldsymbol{\tau}_{ph}) + b_{\mathrm{sk}}(\boldsymbol{\rho}_{ph,0}, \boldsymbol{\tau}_{ph}) - b_{\mathbf{n}_p}(\boldsymbol{\tau}_{ph}, \boldsymbol{\psi}_{h,0}) + (A(\alpha_p\, p_{ph,0}\,\mathbf{I}), \boldsymbol{\tau}_{ph})_{\Omega_p}\\
&= (A(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_{p,0}), \boldsymbol{\tau}_{ph})_{\Omega_p} + b_s(\boldsymbol{\eta}_{p,0}, \boldsymbol{\tau}_{ph}) + b_{\mathrm{sk}}(\boldsymbol{\rho}_{p,0}, \boldsymbol{\tau}_{ph}) - b_{\mathbf{n}_p}(\boldsymbol{\tau}_{ph}, \boldsymbol{\psi}_{0}) + (A(\alpha_p\, p_{p,0}\,\mathbf{I}), \boldsymbol{\tau}_{ph})_{\Omega_p} = 0,\\
&- b_s(\mathbf{v}_{sh}, \boldsymbol{\sigma}_{ph,0}) = -b_s(\mathbf{v}_{sh}, \boldsymbol{\sigma}_{p,0}) = (\mathbf{f}_p, \mathbf{v}_{sh})_{\Omega_p},\\
&- b_{\mathrm{sk}}(\boldsymbol{\chi}_{ph}, \boldsymbol{\sigma}_{ph,0}) = -b_{\mathrm{sk}}(\boldsymbol{\chi}_{ph}, \boldsymbol{\sigma}_{p,0}) = 0, \qquad (5.15)\\
&b_{\mathbf{n}_p}(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_{ph,0}, \boldsymbol{\phi}_h) - \mu\,\alpha_{BJS} \sum_{j=1}^{n-1} \langle \sqrt{\mathbf{K}_j^{-1}}(\mathbf{u}_{fh,0} - \boldsymbol{\theta}_{h,0}) \cdot \mathbf{t}_{f,j}, \boldsymbol{\phi}_h \cdot \mathbf{t}_{f,j} \rangle_{\Gamma_{fp}} + \langle \boldsymbol{\phi}_h \cdot \mathbf{n}_p, \lambda_{h,0} \rangle_{\Gamma_{fp}}\\
&= b_{\mathbf{n}_p}(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_{p,0}, \boldsymbol{\phi}_h) - \mu\,\alpha_{BJS} \sum_{j=1}^{n-1} \langle \sqrt{\mathbf{K}_j^{-1}}(\mathbf{u}_{f,0} - \boldsymbol{\theta}_{0}) \cdot \mathbf{t}_{f,j}, \boldsymbol{\phi}_h \cdot \mathbf{t}_{f,j} \rangle_{\Gamma_{fp}} + \langle \boldsymbol{\phi}_h \cdot \mathbf{n}_p, \lambda_{0} \rangle_{\Gamma_{fp}} = 0,
\end{aligned}$$

for all $\boldsymbol{\tau}_{ph} \in \mathbb{X}_{ph}$, $\mathbf{v}_{sh} \in \mathbf{V}_{sh}$, $\boldsymbol{\chi}_{ph} \in \mathbb{Q}_{ph}$, $\boldsymbol{\phi}_h \in \boldsymbol{\Lambda}_{sh}$. Note that (5.15) is a mixed elasticity system with mixed boundary conditions on Γ_{fp} and its well-posedness follows from the classical Babuška–Brezzi theory. Note also that $p_{ph,0}, \mathbf{u}_{fh,0}, \boldsymbol{\theta}_{h,0}$ and $\lambda_{h,0}$ are data for this problem. It holds that

$$\|\boldsymbol{\sigma}_{ph,0}\|_{\mathbb{X}_p} + \|\boldsymbol{\eta}_{ph,0}\|_{\mathbf{V}_s} + \|\boldsymbol{\rho}_{ph,0}\|_{\mathbb{Q}_p} + \|\boldsymbol{\psi}_{h,0}\|_{\boldsymbol{\Lambda}_{sh}} \le C\left(\|p_{p,0}\|_{\mathrm{H}^1(\Omega_p)} + \|\mathbf{K}\nabla p_{p,0}\|_{\mathbf{H}^1(\Omega_p)} + \|\mathbf{f}_p\|_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_p)}\right), \tag{5.16}$$

where we have used (5.12), (4.42) and (5.14).

4. Finally, define $(\widehat{\boldsymbol{\sigma}}_{ph,0}, \mathbf{u}_{sh,0}, \boldsymbol{\gamma}_{ph,0}) \in \mathbb{X}_{ph} \times \mathbf{V}_{sh} \times \mathbb{Q}_{ph}$ as the unique solution of the problem

$$\begin{aligned}
&(A(\widehat{\boldsymbol{\sigma}}_{ph,0}), \boldsymbol{\tau}_{ph})_{\Omega_p} + b_s(\boldsymbol{\tau}_{ph}, \mathbf{u}_{sh,0}) + b_{\mathrm{sk}}(\boldsymbol{\tau}_{ph}, \boldsymbol{\gamma}_{ph,0}) = b_{\mathbf{n}_p}(\boldsymbol{\tau}_{ph}, \boldsymbol{\theta}_{h,0}),\\
&- b_s(\widehat{\boldsymbol{\sigma}}_{ph,0}, \mathbf{v}_{sh}) = 0, \qquad (5.17)\\
&- b_{\mathrm{sk}}(\widehat{\boldsymbol{\sigma}}_{ph,0}, \boldsymbol{\chi}_{ph}) = 0,
\end{aligned}$$

for all $\boldsymbol{\tau}_{ph} \in \mathbb{X}_{ph}$, $\mathbf{v}_{sh} \in \mathbf{V}_{sh}$, $\boldsymbol{\chi}_{ph} \in \mathbb{Q}_{ph}$. Problem (5.17) is well-posed as a direct application of the classical Babuška–Brezzi theory. Note that $\boldsymbol{\theta}_{h,0}$ is datum for this problem. It holds that

$$\|\widehat{\boldsymbol{\sigma}}_{ph,0}\|_{\mathbb{X}_p} + \|\mathbf{u}_{sh,0}\|_{\mathbf{V}_s} + \|\boldsymbol{\gamma}_{ph,0}\|_{\mathbb{Q}_p} \le C\big(\|\mathbf{f}_f\|_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_f)} + \|p_{p,0}\|_{\mathrm{H}^1(\Omega_p)} + \|\mathbf{K}\nabla p_{p,0}\|_{\mathbf{H}^1(\Omega_p)}\big), \tag{5.18}$$

where we have used that $b_{\mathbf{n}_p}(\boldsymbol{\tau}_{ph}, \boldsymbol{\theta}_{h,0}) = b_{\mathbf{n}_p}(\boldsymbol{\tau}_{ph}, \boldsymbol{\theta}_0)$ (cf. (5.11) and (5.2)), (3.2) and (4.42).

We then define $\mathbf{p}_{h,0} := (\boldsymbol{\sigma}_{ph,0}, p_{ph,0}, \mathbf{u}_{ph,0}, \mathbf{T}_{fh,0}, \mathbf{u}_{fh,0}, \boldsymbol{\theta}_{h,0})$ and $\mathbf{r}_{h,0} := (\lambda_{h,0}, \mathbf{u}_{sh,0}, \boldsymbol{\gamma}_{ph,0})$. The above construction implies that $(\mathbf{p}_{h,0}, \mathbf{r}_{h,0})$ satisfy (5.9) with

$$\begin{aligned}
(\widehat{\mathbf{f}}_{ph,0}, \boldsymbol{\tau}_{ph})_{\Omega_p} &= a_e(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_{ph,0}, p_{ph,0}; \boldsymbol{\tau}_{ph}, 0) - (A(\widehat{\boldsymbol{\sigma}}_{ph,0}), \boldsymbol{\tau}_{ph})_{\Omega_p},\\
(\widehat{q}_{ph,0}, w_{ph})_{\Omega_p} &= (s_0 p_{ph,0}, w_{ph})_{\Omega_p} + a_e(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_{ph,0}, p_{ph,0}; \mathbf{0}, w_{ph}) - b_p(\mathbf{u}_{ph,0}, w_{ph}).
\end{aligned} \tag{5.19}$$

From the stability bounds (5.14), (5.16), (5.18) and (4.31), we obtain

$$\begin{aligned}\|\widehat{\mathbf{f}}_{ph,0}\|_{\mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_p)} + \|\widehat{q}_{ph,0}\|_{\mathrm{L}^2(\Omega_p)} &\le C\left(\|\mathbf{f}_f\|_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_f)} + \|\mathbf{f}_p\|_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_p)} + \|p_{p,0}\|_{\mathrm{H}^1(\Omega_p)} + \|\mathbf{K}\nabla p_{p,0}\|_{\mathbf{H}^1(\Omega_p)}\right)\\ &\le \widehat{C}_{ep,h}\left(\|\mathbf{f}_f\|_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_f)} + \|\mathbf{f}_p\|_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_p)}\right), \end{aligned} \tag{5.20}$$

hence $(\widehat{\mathbf{f}}_{ph,0}, \widehat{q}_{ph,0}) \in E_b'$ and (5.10) holds. □

REMARK 5.5 The above construction provides compatible initial data for the nondifferentiated elasticity variables $(\boldsymbol{\eta}_{ph,0}, \boldsymbol{\rho}_{ph,0}, \boldsymbol{\psi}_{h,0})$ in the sense of the first equation in (5.15).

Now, we establish the well-posedness of problem (5.3) and the corresponding stability bound.

THEOREM 5.6 Assume that the conditions of Lemma 3.3 are satisfied. Then, for each

$$\mathbf{f}_f \in \mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_f), \quad \mathbf{f}_p \in \mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_p), \quad q_p \in \mathrm{W}^{1,1}(0,T;\mathrm{L}^2(\Omega_p)), \quad p_{p,0} \in \mathrm{H}_p \ (cf.\ (4.30)),$$

satisfying (4.26), (4.31), (4.32) and (5.8), and for each compatible discrete initial data $(\mathbf{p}_{h,0}, \mathbf{r}_{h,0})$ constructed in Lemma 5.4, there exists a unique solution of (5.3), $(\mathbf{p}_h, \mathbf{r}_h) : [0,T] \to \mathbf{Q}_h \times \mathbf{S}_h$ with $\mathbf{u}_{fh}(t) \in \mathbf{W}_r$ (cf. (3.27)), $(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_{ph}, p_{ph}) \in \mathrm{W}^{1,\infty}(0,T;\mathbb{X}_{ph}) \times \mathrm{W}^{1,\infty}(0,T;\mathrm{W}_{ph})$ and $(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_{ph}(0), p_{ph}(0), \mathbf{u}_{ph}(0), \mathbf{T}_{fh}(0), \mathbf{u}_{fh}(0), \boldsymbol{\theta}_h(0), \lambda_h(0)) = (\boldsymbol{\sigma}_{ph,0}, p_{ph,0}, \mathbf{u}_{ph,0}, \mathbf{T}_{fh,0}, \mathbf{u}_{fh,0}, \boldsymbol{\theta}_{h,0}, \lambda_{h,0})$. Moreover, if $q_p \in \mathrm{H}^1(0,T;\mathrm{L}^2(\Omega_p))$, there exists a positive constant C, independent of h and $s_{0,\min}$, such that

$$\begin{aligned} &\|A^{1/2}(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_{ph} + \alpha_p p_{ph}\mathbf{I})\|_{\mathrm{W}^{1,\infty}(0,T;\mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_p))} + \|\mathbf{div}(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_{ph})\|_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_p)} + \sqrt{s_0}\|p_{ph}\|_{\mathrm{W}^{1,\infty}(0,T;\mathrm{W}_p)} + \|p_{ph}\|_{\mathrm{H}^1(0,T;\mathrm{W}_p)}\\ &\quad + \|\mathbf{u}_{ph}\|_{\mathrm{L}^2(0,T;\mathbf{V}_p)} + \|\partial_t\,\mathbf{u}_{ph}\|_{\mathrm{L}^2(0,T;\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_p))} + \|\mathbf{T}_{fh}\|_{\mathrm{H}^1(0,T;\mathbb{X}_f)} + \|\mathbf{u}_{fh}\|_{\mathrm{H}^1(0,T;\mathbf{V}_f)}\\ &\quad + |\mathbf{u}_{fh} - \boldsymbol{\theta}_h|_{\mathrm{H}^1(0,T;\mathrm{BJS})} + \|\boldsymbol{\theta}_h\|_{\mathrm{L}^\infty(0,T;\boldsymbol{\Lambda}_{sh})} + \|\boldsymbol{\theta}_h\|_{\mathrm{L}^2(0,T;\boldsymbol{\Lambda}_{sh})} + \|\lambda_h\|_{\mathrm{H}^1(0,T;\Lambda_{ph})}\\ &\quad + \|\mathbf{u}_{sh}\|_{\mathrm{L}^\infty(0,T;\mathbf{V}_s)} + \|\mathbf{u}_{sh}\|_{\mathrm{L}^2(0,T;\mathbf{V}_s)} + \|\boldsymbol{\gamma}_{ph}\|_{\mathrm{L}^\infty(0,T;\mathbb{Q}_p)} + \|\boldsymbol{\gamma}_{ph}\|_{\mathrm{L}^2(0,T;\mathbb{Q}_p)}\\ &\le C\Bigg(\|\mathbf{f}_f\|_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_f)} + \|\mathbf{f}_p\|_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_p)} + \|q_p\|_{\mathrm{H}^1(0,T;\mathrm{L}^2(\Omega_p))} + \frac{1}{\sqrt{s_0}}\|q_p(0)\|_{\mathrm{L}^2(\Omega_p)}\\ &\quad + \sqrt{s_0}\,\|p_{p,0}\|_{\mathrm{W}_p} + \left(1 + \frac{1}{\sqrt{s_0}}\right)\left(\|p_{p,0}\|_{\mathrm{H}^1(\Omega_p)} + \|\mathbf{K}\nabla p_{p,0}\|_{\mathbf{H}^1(\Omega_p)}\right)\Bigg). \end{aligned} \tag{5.21}$$

Proof. With the discrete inf-sup conditions (5.4)–(5.5) and the discrete initial data construction described in (5.11)–(5.17), the proof is similar to the proofs of Theorem 4.12 and Theorem 4.15, with several differences. First, due to nonconforming choices of the Lagrange multiplier spaces equipped with L^2-norms, the operators L_λ and $R_{\boldsymbol{\theta}}$ from Lemma 4.5 are now defined as $L_\lambda : \Lambda_{ph} \to \Lambda'_{ph}$, $L_\lambda(\lambda_h)(\xi_h) := \langle \lambda_h, \xi_h\rangle_{\Gamma_{fp}}$ and $R_{\boldsymbol{\theta}} : \boldsymbol{\Lambda}_{sh} \to \boldsymbol{\Lambda}'_{sh}$, $R_{\boldsymbol{\theta}}(\boldsymbol{\theta}_h)(\boldsymbol{\phi}_h) := \langle \boldsymbol{\theta}_h, \boldsymbol{\phi}_h\rangle_{\Gamma_{fp}}$. The fact that L_λ and $R_{\boldsymbol{\theta}}$ are continuous and coercive follows immediately from their definitions, since $L_\lambda(\xi_h)(\xi_h) = \|\xi\|^2_{\Lambda_{ph}}$ and $R_{\boldsymbol{\theta}}(\boldsymbol{\phi}_h)(\boldsymbol{\phi}_h) = \|\boldsymbol{\phi}_h\|^2_{\boldsymbol{\Lambda}_{sh}}$. Second, the proof in Theorem 4.12 that the solution at $t = 0$ equals the initial data works in the discrete case due to the choice of the discrete initial data as the elliptic projection of the continuous initial data, cf. (5.13) and (5.15). Third, the control of p_{ph}, $\boldsymbol{\theta}_h$, λ_h, $\mathbf{u}_{sh}$ and

$\boldsymbol{\gamma}_{ph}$ follows from the discrete inf-sup conditions (5.4) and (5.5). Fourth, the discrete version of the initial data bound (4.50) follows from (5.14) and (5.16). Finally, in the discrete version of (4.52), we apply the orthogonality property (5.11) to deduce that $\langle \partial_t \boldsymbol{\sigma}_{ph}(0)\mathbf{n}_p, \boldsymbol{\theta}_h(0)\rangle_{\Gamma_{fp}} = \langle \partial_t \boldsymbol{\sigma}_{ph}(0)\mathbf{n}_p, \boldsymbol{\theta}(0)\rangle_{\Gamma_{fp}}$ and then the proof continues as in the continuous case, using the normal trace inequality (3.2). □

REMARK 5.7 As in the continuous case, we can recover the nondifferentiated elasticity variables with

$$\forall\, t \in [0,T], \quad \boldsymbol{\eta}_{ph}(t) = \boldsymbol{\eta}_{ph,0} + \int_0^t \mathbf{u}_{sh}(s)\,\mathrm{d}s,$$
$$\boldsymbol{\rho}_{ph}(t) = \boldsymbol{\rho}_{ph,0} + \int_0^t \boldsymbol{\gamma}_{ph}(s)\,\mathrm{d}s, \quad \boldsymbol{\psi}_h(t) = \boldsymbol{\psi}_{h,0} + \int_0^t \boldsymbol{\theta}_h(s)\,\mathrm{d}s.$$

Then (3.7) holds discretely, which follows from integrating the equation associated to $\boldsymbol{\tau}_{ph}$ in (5.3) from 0 to $t \in (0,T]$ and using the first equation in (5.15).

5.2 *Error analysis*

We proceed with establishing rates of convergence. Let the polynomial degrees in $\mathbb{X}_{ph} \times \mathrm{W}_{ph} \times \mathbf{V}_{ph} \times \mathbb{X}_{fh} \times \mathbf{V}_{fh} \times \boldsymbol{\Lambda}_{sh} \times \Lambda_{ph} \times \mathbf{V}_{sh} \times \mathbb{Q}_{ph}$ be, respectively, $s_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p}, s_{p_p}, s_{\mathbf{u}_p}, s_{\mathbf{T}_f}, s_{\mathbf{u}_f} s_{\boldsymbol{\theta}}, s_\lambda, s_{\mathbf{u}_s}, s_{\boldsymbol{\gamma}_p}$. Let us set $\mathrm{V} \in \{\mathrm{W}_p, \mathbf{V}_s, \mathbb{Q}_p\}$, $\Lambda \in \{\boldsymbol{\Lambda}_s, \Lambda_p\}$ and let V_h, Λ_h be the discrete counterparts. Let $P_h^{\mathrm{V}} : \mathrm{V} \to \mathrm{V}_h$ and $P_h^{\Lambda} : \Lambda \to \Lambda_h$ be the L^2-projection operators, satisfying

$$(u - P_h^{\mathrm{V}}(u), v_h)_{\Omega_p} = 0 \quad \forall\, v_h \in \mathrm{V}_h, \quad \langle \theta - P_h^{\Lambda}(\theta), \phi_h\rangle_{\Gamma_{fp}} = 0 \quad \forall\, \phi_h \in \Lambda_h, \tag{5.22}$$

where $u \in \{p_p, \mathbf{u}_s, \boldsymbol{\gamma}_p\}$, $\theta \in \{\boldsymbol{\theta}, \lambda\}$ and v_h, ϕ_h are the corresponding discrete test functions. We have the approximation properties (Ciarlet, 1978):

$$\|u - P_h^{\mathrm{V}}(u)\|_{\mathrm{L}^2(\Omega_p)} \le C h^{s_u+1}\, \|u\|_{\mathrm{H}^{s_u+1}(\Omega_p)}, \quad \|\theta - P_h^{\Lambda}(\theta)\|_{\Lambda_h} \le C h^{s_\theta+1}\, \|\theta\|_{\mathrm{H}^{s_\theta+1}(\Gamma_{fp})}, \tag{5.23}$$

where $s_u \in \{s_{p_p}, s_{\mathbf{u}_s}, s_{\boldsymbol{\gamma}_p}\}$ and $s_\theta \in \{s_{\boldsymbol{\theta}}, s_\lambda\}$.

Since the discrete Lagrange multiplier spaces are chosen as $\boldsymbol{\Lambda}_{sh} = \mathbb{X}_{ph}\mathbf{n}_p|_{\Gamma_{fp}}$ and $\Lambda_{ph} = \mathbf{V}_{ph} \cdot \mathbf{n}_p|_{\Gamma_{fp}}$, respectively, we have

$$\langle \boldsymbol{\theta} - P_h^{\boldsymbol{\Lambda}_s}(\boldsymbol{\theta}), \boldsymbol{\tau}_{ph}\mathbf{n}_p\rangle_{\Gamma_{fp}} = 0 \quad \forall\, \boldsymbol{\tau}_{ph} \in \mathbb{X}_{ph}, \quad \langle \lambda - P_h^{\Lambda_p}(\lambda), \mathbf{v}_{ph} \cdot \mathbf{n}_p\rangle_{\Gamma_{fp}} = 0 \quad \forall\, \mathbf{v}_{ph} \in \mathbf{V}_{ph}. \tag{5.24}$$

Next, denote $\mathrm{X} \in \{\mathbb{X}_f, \mathbb{X}_p, \mathbf{V}_p\}$, $\sigma \in \{\mathbf{T}_f, \boldsymbol{\sigma}_p, \mathbf{u}_p\} \in \mathrm{X}$ and let X_h, τ_h be their discrete counterparts. Let $I_h^{\mathrm{X}} : \mathrm{X} \cap \mathrm{H}^1(\Omega_\star) \to \mathrm{X}_h$ be the mixed finite element projection operator (Brezzi & Fortin, 1991), satisfying

$$(\operatorname{div}(I_h^{\mathrm{X}}\sigma), w_h) = (\operatorname{div}(\sigma), w_h) \quad \forall\, w_h \in \mathrm{W}_h, \quad \left\langle I_h^{\mathrm{X}}(\sigma)\mathbf{n}_\star, \tau_h\mathbf{n}_\star\right\rangle_{\Gamma_{fp}} = \left\langle \sigma\mathbf{n}_\star, \tau_h\mathbf{n}_\star\right\rangle_{\Gamma_{fp}} \quad \forall\, \tau_h \in \mathrm{X}_h, \tag{5.25}$$

and

$$\|\sigma - I_h^{\mathrm{X}}(\sigma)\|_{\mathrm{L}^2(\Omega_\star)} \le C\, h^{s_\sigma+1}\|\sigma\|_{\mathrm{H}^{s_\sigma+1}(\Omega_\star)}, \quad \|\mathrm{div}(\sigma - I_h^{\mathrm{X}}(\sigma))\|_{\mathrm{L}^2(\Omega_\star)} \le C\, h^{s_\sigma+1}\|\mathrm{div}(\sigma)\|_{\mathrm{H}^{s_\sigma+1}(\Omega_\star)}, \tag{5.26}$$

where $\star \in \{f,p\}$, $w_h \in \{\mathbf{v}_{fh}, \mathbf{v}_{sh}, w_{ph}\}$, $\mathrm{W}_h \in \{\mathbf{V}_f, \mathbf{V}_s, \mathrm{W}_p\}$ and $s_\sigma \in \{s_{\mathbf{T}_f}, s_{\mathbf{u}_p}, s_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p}\}$.

Finally, let $S_h^{\mathbf{V}_f}$ be the Scott–Zhang interpolation operators onto $\mathbf{V}_{fh}$, satisfying Scott & Zhang (1990)

$$\|\mathbf{v}_f - S_h^{\mathbf{V}_f}(\mathbf{v}_f)\|_{\mathbf{H}^1(\Omega_f)} \le C\, h^{s_{\mathbf{u}_f}}\|\mathbf{v}_f\|_{\mathbf{H}^{s_{\mathbf{u}_f}+1}(\Omega_f)}. \tag{5.27}$$

Now, let $(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p, p_p, \mathbf{u}_p, \mathbf{T}_f, \mathbf{u}_f, \boldsymbol{\theta}, \lambda, \mathbf{u}_s, \boldsymbol{\gamma}_p)$ and $(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_{ph}, p_{ph}, \mathbf{u}_{ph}, \mathbf{T}_{fh}, \mathbf{u}_{fh}, \boldsymbol{\theta}_h, \lambda_h, \mathbf{u}_{sh}, \boldsymbol{\gamma}_{ph})$ be the solutions of (3.17) and (5.3), respectively. We introduce the error terms as the difference of these two solutions and decompose them into approximation and discretization errors using the interpolation operators:

$$\begin{aligned}
\mathbf{e}_\sigma &:= \sigma - \sigma_h = (\sigma - I_h^{\mathrm{X}}(\sigma)) + (I_h^{\mathrm{X}}(\sigma) - \sigma_h) := \mathbf{e}_\sigma^I + \mathbf{e}_\sigma^h, \quad \sigma \in \{\mathbf{T}_f, \boldsymbol{\sigma}_p, \mathbf{u}_p\},\\
\mathbf{e}_u &:= u - u_h = (u - P_h^{\mathrm{V}}(u)) + (P_h^{\mathrm{V}}(u) - u_h) := \mathbf{e}_u^I + \mathbf{e}_u^h, \quad u \in \{p_p, \mathbf{u}_s, \boldsymbol{\gamma}_p\},\\
\mathbf{e}_\theta &:= \theta - \theta_h = (\theta - P_h^{\Lambda}(\theta)) + (P_h^{\Lambda}(\theta) - \theta_h) := \mathbf{e}_\theta^I + \mathbf{e}_\theta^h, \quad \theta \in \{\boldsymbol{\theta}, \lambda\},\\
\mathbf{e}_{\mathbf{u}_f} &:= \mathbf{u}_f - \mathbf{u}_{fh} = (\mathbf{u}_f - S_h^{\mathbf{V}_f}\mathbf{u}_f) + (S_h^{\mathbf{V}_f}\mathbf{u}_f - \mathbf{u}_{fh}) := \mathbf{e}_{\mathbf{u}_f}^I + \mathbf{e}_{\mathbf{u}_f}^h.
\end{aligned} \tag{5.28}$$

Then, we set the global errors endowed with the above decomposition:

$$\mathbf{e}_{\mathbf{p}} := (\mathbf{e}_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p}, \mathbf{e}_{p_p}, \mathbf{e}_{\mathbf{u}_p}, \mathbf{e}_{\mathbf{T}_f}, \mathbf{e}_{\mathbf{u}_f}, \mathbf{e}_{\boldsymbol{\theta}}), \quad \mathbf{e}_{\mathbf{r}} := (\mathbf{e}_\lambda, \mathbf{e}_{\mathbf{u}_s}, \mathbf{e}_{\boldsymbol{\gamma}_p}).$$

We form the error equation by subtracting the discrete equations (5.3) from the continuous one (3.17):

$$\begin{aligned}
\partial_t\, \mathcal{E}(\mathbf{e}_{\mathbf{p}})(\mathbf{q}_h) + \mathcal{A}(\mathbf{e}_{\mathbf{p}})(\mathbf{q}_h) + \mathcal{K}_{\mathbf{u}_f}(\mathbf{p})(\mathbf{q}_h) - \mathcal{K}_{\mathbf{u}_{fh}}(\mathbf{p}_h)(\mathbf{q}_h) + \mathcal{B}'(\mathbf{e}_{\mathbf{r}})(\mathbf{q}_h) &= 0 \quad \forall\, \mathbf{q}_h \in \mathbf{Q}_h,\\
-\mathcal{B}(e_{\mathbf{p}})(\mathbf{s}_h) &= 0 \quad \forall\, \mathbf{s}_h \in \mathbf{S}_h.
\end{aligned} \tag{5.29}$$

We now establish the main result of this section.

THEOREM 5.8 Let the assumptions in Theorem 5.6 holds. For the solutions of the continuous and semidiscrete problems (3.17) and (5.3), respectively, assuming sufficient regularity of the true solution according to (5.23), (5.26) and (5.27), there exists a positive constant C depending on the solution regularity, but independent of h, such that

$$\begin{aligned}
&\|A^{1/2}(\mathbf{e}_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p} + \alpha_p\, \mathbf{e}_{p_p}\mathbf{I})\|_{\mathrm{W}^{1,\infty}(0,T;\mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_p))} + \|\mathbf{div}(\mathbf{e}_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p})\|_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_p)} + \sqrt{s_0}\|\mathbf{e}_{p_p}\|_{\mathrm{W}^{1,\infty}(0,T;\mathrm{W}_p)}\\
&\quad + \|\mathbf{e}_{p_p}\|_{\mathrm{H}^1(0,T;\mathrm{W}_p)} + \|\mathbf{e}_{\mathbf{u}_p}\|_{\mathrm{L}^2(0,T;\mathbf{V}_p)} + \|\partial_t \mathbf{e}_{\mathbf{u}_p}\|_{\mathrm{L}^2(0,T;\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_p))} + \|\mathbf{e}_{\mathbf{T}_f}\|_{\mathrm{H}^1(0,T;\mathbb{X}_f)}\\
&\quad + \|\mathbf{e}_{\mathbf{u}_f}\|_{\mathrm{H}^1(0,T;\mathbf{V}_f)} + |\mathbf{e}_{\mathbf{u}_f} - \mathbf{e}_{\boldsymbol{\theta}}|_{\mathrm{H}^1(0,T;\mathtt{BJS})} + \|\mathbf{e}_{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\|_{\mathrm{L}^\infty(0,T;\boldsymbol{\Lambda}_{sh})} + \|\mathbf{e}_{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\|_{\mathrm{L}^2(0,T;\boldsymbol{\Lambda}_{sh})} + \|\mathbf{e}_\lambda\|_{\mathrm{H}^1(0,T;\Lambda_{ph})}\\
&\quad + \|\mathbf{e}_{\mathbf{u}_s}\|_{\mathrm{L}^\infty(0,T;\mathbf{V}_s)} + \|\mathbf{e}_{\mathbf{u}_s}\|_{\mathrm{L}^2(0,T;\mathbf{V}_s)} + \|\mathbf{e}_{\boldsymbol{\gamma}_p}\|_{\mathrm{L}^\infty(0,T;\mathbb{Q}_p)} + \|\mathbf{e}_{\boldsymbol{\gamma}_p}\|_{\mathrm{L}^2(0,T;\mathbb{Q}_p)}\\
&\le C\sqrt{\exp(T)}\,\left(h^{s_{\underline{u}}+1} + h^{s_{\underline{\theta}}+1} + h^{s_{\underline{\sigma}}+1} + h^{s_{\mathbf{u}_f}}\right),
\end{aligned} \tag{5.30}$$

where $s_{\underline{u}} = \min\{s_{p_p}, s_{\mathbf{u}_s}, s_{\boldsymbol{\gamma}_p}\}$, $s_{\underline{\theta}} = \min\{s_{\boldsymbol{\theta}}, s_\lambda,\}$ and $s_{\underline{\sigma}} = \min\{s_{\mathbf{T}_f}, s_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p}, s_{\mathbf{u}_p}\}$.

Proof. We start by taking $\mathbf{q}_h = (\mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p}, \mathbf{e}^h_{p_p}, \mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_p}, \mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{T}_f}, \mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_f}, \mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\theta}})$ and $\mathbf{s}_h = (\mathbf{e}^h_{\lambda}, \mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_s}, \mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\gamma}_p})$ in (5.29), to obtain

$$\begin{aligned}
&\frac{1}{2} s_0\, \partial_t\, (\mathbf{e}^h_{p_p}, \mathbf{e}^h_{p_p})_{\Omega_p} + \frac{1}{2}\partial_t\, a_e(\mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p}, \mathbf{e}^h_{p_p}; \mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p}, \mathbf{e}^h_{p_p}) + a_p(\mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_p}, \mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_p}) + a_f(\mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{T}_f}, \mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_f}; \mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{T}_f}, \mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_f})\\
&\quad + \kappa_{\mathbf{u}_{fh}}(\mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{T}_f}, \mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_f}; \mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{T}_f}, \mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_f}) + \kappa_{\mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_f}}(\mathbf{T}_f, \mathbf{u}_f; \mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{T}_f}, \mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_f}) + a_{\mathrm{BJS}}(\mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_f}, \mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\theta}}; \mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_f}, \mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\theta}})\\
&= - a_e(\partial_t\, \mathbf{e}^I_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p}, \partial_t\, \mathbf{e}^I_{p_p}; \mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p}, \mathbf{e}^h_{p_p}) - a_p(\mathbf{e}^I_{\mathbf{u}_p}, \mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_p}) - a_f(\mathbf{e}^I_{\mathbf{T}_f}, \mathbf{e}^I_{\mathbf{u}_f}, \mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{T}_f}, \mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_f})\\
&\quad - \kappa_{\mathbf{u}_{fh}}(\mathbf{e}^I_{\mathbf{T}_f}, \mathbf{e}^I_{\mathbf{u}_f}; \mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{T}_f}, \mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_f}) - \kappa_{\mathbf{e}^I_{\mathbf{u}_f}}(\mathbf{T}_f, \mathbf{u}_f; \mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{T}_f}, \mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_f}) - a_{\mathrm{BJS}}(\mathbf{e}^I_{\mathbf{u}_f}, \mathbf{e}^I_{\boldsymbol{\theta}}; \mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_f}, \mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\theta}}) - b_{\mathrm{sk}}(\mathbf{e}^I_{\boldsymbol{\gamma}_p}, \mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p})\\
&\quad + b_{\mathrm{sk}}(\mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\gamma}_p}, \mathbf{e}^I_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p}) - \langle \mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_f}\cdot \mathbf{n}_f, \mathbf{e}^I_{\lambda}\rangle_{\Gamma_{fp}} + \langle \mathbf{e}^I_{\mathbf{u}_f}\cdot \mathbf{n}_f, \mathbf{e}^h_{\lambda}\rangle_{\Gamma_{fp}} - \langle \mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\cdot \mathbf{n}_p, \mathbf{e}^I_{\lambda}\rangle_{\Gamma_{fp}} + \langle \mathbf{e}^I_{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\cdot \mathbf{n}_p, \mathbf{e}^h_{\lambda}\rangle_{\Gamma_{fp}}, \qquad (5.31)
\end{aligned}$$

where, the right-hand side of (5.31) has been simplified, since the projection properties (5.22) and (5.24)–(5.25), and the fact that $\mathbf{div}(\mathbb{X}_{ph}) = \mathbf{V}_{sh}$, $\mathrm{div}(\mathbf{V}_{ph}) = \mathrm{W}_{ph}$ (cf. (5.1)), imply that the following terms are zero:

$$\begin{gathered}
s_0(\partial_t\, \mathbf{e}^I_{p_p}, \mathbf{e}^h_{p_p})_{\Omega_p},\ b_p(\mathbf{e}^I_{p_p}, \mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_p}),\ b_p(\mathbf{e}^h_{p_p}, \mathbf{e}^I_{\mathbf{u}_p}),\ b_{\mathbf{n}_p}(\mathbf{e}^I_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p}, \mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\theta}}),\ b_{\mathbf{n}_p}(\mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p}, \mathbf{e}^I_{\boldsymbol{\theta}}),\\
b_s(\mathbf{e}^I_{\mathbf{u}_s}, \mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p}),\ b_s(\mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_s}, \mathbf{e}^I_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p}),\ \langle \mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_p}\cdot \mathbf{n}_p, \mathbf{e}^I_{\lambda}\rangle_{\Gamma_{fp}},\ \langle \mathbf{e}^I_{\mathbf{u}_p}\cdot \mathbf{n}_p, \mathbf{e}^h_{\lambda}\rangle_{\Gamma_{fp}}.
\end{gathered}$$

Then, using the fact that $\mathbf{u}_f(t), \mathbf{u}_{fh}(t) : [0,T] \to \mathbf{W}_r$, cf. (3.27), the positivity estimates (3.29)–(3.30) and the continuity bounds (3.19)–(3.20) of the bilinear forms involved and the Cauchy–Schwarz and Young's inequalities, we get

$$\begin{aligned}
&\frac{1}{2}s_0\partial_t\|\mathbf{e}^h_{p_p}\|^2_{\mathrm{W}_p} + \frac{1}{2}\partial_t\|A^{1/2}(\mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p} + \alpha_p \mathbf{e}^h_{p_p}\mathbf{I})\|^2_{\mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_p)}\\
&\quad + \mu k^{-1}_{\max}\|\mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_p}\|^2_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_p)} + 2C_{\mathcal{K}}(r_0 - r)\|(\mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{T}_f}, \mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_f})\|^2 + c_{\mathrm{BJS}}\,|\mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_f} - \mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\theta}}|^2_{\mathrm{BJS}}\\
&\le C\Big(\|\mathbf{e}^I_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p}\|^2_{\mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_p)} + \|\partial_t A^{1/2}(\mathbf{e}^I_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p} + \alpha_p \mathbf{e}^I_{p_p}\mathbf{I})\|^2_{\mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_p)} + \|\mathbf{e}^I_{\mathbf{u}_p}\|^2_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_p)} + (1+2r)\|(\mathbf{e}^I_{\mathbf{T}_f}, \mathbf{e}^I_{\mathbf{u}_f})\|^2\\
&\quad + |\mathbf{e}^I_{\mathbf{u}_f} - \mathbf{e}^I_{\boldsymbol{\theta}}|^2_{\mathrm{BJS}} + \|\mathbf{e}^I_{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\|^2_{\boldsymbol{\Lambda}_{sh}} + \|\mathbf{e}^I_{\lambda}\|^2_{\Lambda_{ph}} + \|\mathbf{e}^I_{\boldsymbol{\gamma}_p}\|^2_{\mathbb{Q}_p}\Big)\\
&\quad + \delta_1\Big(\|\mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_p}\|^2_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_p)} + \|(\mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{T}_f}, \mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_f})\|^2 + |\mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_f} - \mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\theta}}|^2_{\mathrm{BJS}}\Big)\\
&\quad + \delta_2\Big(\|A^{1/2}(\mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p} + \alpha_p \mathbf{e}^h_{p_p}\mathbf{I})\|^2_{\mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_p)} + \|\mathbf{e}^h_{p_p}\|^2_{\mathrm{W}_p} + \|\mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\|^2_{\boldsymbol{\Lambda}_{sh}} + \|\mathbf{e}^h_{\lambda}\|^2_{\Lambda_{ph}} + \|\mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\gamma}_p}\|^2_{\mathbb{Q}_p}\Big), \qquad (5.32)
\end{aligned}$$

where we have used the estimate

$$b_{\mathrm{sk}}(\mathbf{e}^I_{\boldsymbol{\gamma}_p}, \mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p}) \;=\; \frac{1}{c}(A^{1/2}\mathbf{e}^I_{\boldsymbol{\gamma}_p}, A^{1/2}\mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p})_{\Omega_p} \;\le\; C\,\|\mathbf{e}^I_{\boldsymbol{\gamma}_p}\|_{\mathbb{Q}_p}\Big(\|A^{1/2}(\mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p} + \alpha_p \mathbf{e}^h_{p_p}\mathbf{I})\|_{\mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_p)} + \|\mathbf{e}^h_{p_p}\|_{\mathrm{W}_p}\Big), \qquad (5.33)$$

which, follows from the definition of A due to the extension from $\mathbb{S}$ to $\mathbb{M}$ as in Lee (2016). Next, we choose $r = r_0/2$ and δ_1 small enough in (5.32) and integrate from 0 to $t \in (0, T]$ to find

$$
\begin{aligned}
& s_0\|\mathbf{e}^h_{p_p}(t)\|^2_{\mathrm{W}_p} + \|A^{1/2}(\mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p} + \alpha_p \mathbf{e}^h_{p_p}\mathbf{I})(t)\|^2_{\mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_p)} + \int_0^t \left(\|\mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_p}\|^2_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_p)} + \|(\mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{T}_f}, \mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_f})\|^2 + |\mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_f} - \mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\theta}}|^2_{\mathtt{BJS}} \right) \mathrm{d}s \\
& \leq C \int_0^t \Big(\|\mathbf{e}^I_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p}\|^2_{\mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_p)} + \|\partial_t A^{1/2}(\mathbf{e}^I_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p} + \alpha_p \mathbf{e}^I_{p_p}\mathbf{I})\|^2_{\mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_p)} + \|\mathbf{e}^I_{\mathbf{u}_p}\|^2_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_p)} + \|(\mathbf{e}^I_{\mathbf{T}_f}, \mathbf{e}^I_{\mathbf{u}_f})\|^2 + \|\mathbf{e}^I_{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\|^2_{\boldsymbol{\Lambda}_{sh}} \\
& \quad + |\mathbf{e}^I_{\mathbf{u}_f} - \mathbf{e}^I_{\boldsymbol{\theta}}|^2_{\mathtt{BJS}} + \|\mathbf{e}^I_{\lambda}\|^2_{\Lambda_{ph}} + \|\mathbf{e}^I_{\boldsymbol{\gamma}_p}\|^2_{\mathbb{Q}_p} \Big) \mathrm{d}s + s_0\|\mathbf{e}^h_{p_p}(0)\|^2_{\mathrm{W}_p} + \|A^{1/2}(\mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p} + \alpha_p \mathbf{e}^h_{p_p}\mathbf{I})(0)\|^2_{\mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_p)} \\
& \quad + \delta_2 \int_0^t \left(\|A^{1/2}(\mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p} + \alpha_p \mathbf{e}^h_{p_p}\mathbf{I})\|^2_{\mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_p)} + \|\mathbf{e}^h_{p_p}\|^2_{\mathrm{W}_p} + \|\mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\|^2_{\boldsymbol{\Lambda}_{sh}} + \|\mathbf{e}^h_{\lambda}\|^2_{\Lambda_{ph}} + \|\mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\gamma}_p}\|^2_{\mathbb{Q}_p} \right) \mathrm{d}s. \qquad (5.34)
\end{aligned}
$$

On the other hand, from discrete inf-sup conditions (5.4)–(5.5) in Lemma 5.3 and the first equation in (5.29), we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\|\mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\|_{\boldsymbol{\Lambda}_{sh}} + \|\mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_s}\|_{\mathbf{V}_s} + \|\mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\gamma}_p}\|_{\mathbb{Q}_p} &\leq C \left(\|\partial_t A^{1/2}(\mathbf{e}_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p} + \alpha_p\, \mathbf{e}_{p_p}\mathbf{I})\|_{\mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_p)} + \|\mathbf{e}^I_{\boldsymbol{\gamma}_p}\|_{\mathbb{Q}_p} \right), \\
\text{and} \quad \|\mathbf{e}^h_{p_p}\|_{\mathrm{W}_p} + \|\mathbf{e}^h_{\lambda}\|_{\Lambda_{ph}} &\leq C \left(\|\mathbf{e}^I_{\mathbf{u}_p}\|_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_p)} + \|\mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_p}\|_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_p)} \right), \qquad (5.35)
\end{aligned}
$$

whereas, using (5.1), and taking $w_{ph} = \mathrm{div}(\mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_p})$ and $\mathbf{v}_{sh} = \mathbf{div}(\mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p})$ in (5.29), we obtain, respectively

$$
\begin{aligned}
\|\mathrm{div}(\mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_p})\|_{\mathrm{L}^2(\Omega_p)} &\leq C \left(\|\partial_t A^{1/2}(\mathbf{e}_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p} + \alpha_p\, \mathbf{e}_{p_p}\mathbf{I})\|_{\mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_p)} + s_0\, \|\partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{p_p}\|_{\mathrm{W}_p} \right), \\
\text{and} \quad \|\mathbf{div}(\mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p})\|_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_p)} &= 0.
\end{aligned} \qquad (5.36)
$$

Thus, combining (5.34) with (5.35)–(5.36), and choosing δ_2 small enough, we get

$$
\begin{aligned}
& s_0\|\mathbf{e}^h_{p_p}(t)\|^2_{\mathrm{W}_p} + \|A^{1/2}(\mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p} + \alpha_p \mathbf{e}^h_{p_p}\mathbf{I})(t)\|^2_{\mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_p)} + \|\mathbf{div}(\mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p})\|^2_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_p)} + \int_0^t \Big(\|\mathbf{e}^h_{p_p}\|^2_{\mathrm{W}_p} + \|\mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_p}\|^2_{\mathbf{V}_p} \\
& \quad + \|(\mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{T}_f}, \mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_f})\|^2 + |\mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_f} - \mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\theta}}|^2_{\mathtt{BJS}} + \|\mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\|^2_{\boldsymbol{\Lambda}_{sh}} + \|\mathbf{e}^h_{\lambda}\|^2_{\Lambda_{ph}} + \|\mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_s}\|^2_{\mathbf{V}_s} + \|\mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\gamma}_p}\|^2_{\mathbb{Q}_p} \Big) \mathrm{d}s \\
& \leq C \bigg(\int_0^t \Big(\|\mathbf{e}^I_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p}\|^2_{\mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_p)} + \|\partial_t A^{1/2}(\mathbf{e}^I_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p} + \alpha_p \mathbf{e}^I_{p_p}\mathbf{I})\|^2_{\mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_p)} + \|\mathbf{e}^I_{\mathbf{u}_p}\|^2_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_p)} + \|(\mathbf{e}^I_{\mathbf{T}_f}, \mathbf{e}^I_{\mathbf{u}_f})\|^2 + |\mathbf{e}^I_{\mathbf{u}_f} - \mathbf{e}^I_{\boldsymbol{\theta}}|^2_{\mathtt{BJS}} \\
& \quad + \|\mathbf{e}^I_{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\|^2_{\boldsymbol{\Lambda}_{sh}} + \|\mathbf{e}^I_{\lambda}\|^2_{\Lambda_{ph}} + \|\mathbf{e}^I_{\boldsymbol{\gamma}_p}\|^2_{\mathbb{Q}_p} \Big) \mathrm{d}s + s_0\|\mathbf{e}^h_{p_p}(0)\|^2_{\mathrm{W}_p} + \|A^{1/2}(\mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p} + \alpha_p \mathbf{e}^h_{p_p}\mathbf{I})(0)\|^2_{\mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_p)} \\
& \quad + \int_0^t \left(\|A^{1/2}(\mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p} + \alpha_p \mathbf{e}^h_{p_p}\mathbf{I})\|^2_{\mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_p)} + s_0\|\partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{p_p}\|^2_{\mathrm{W}_p} + \|\partial_t A^{1/2}(\mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p} + \alpha_p \mathbf{e}^h_{p_p}\mathbf{I})\|^2_{\mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_p)} \right) \mathrm{d}s \bigg). \qquad (5.37)
\end{aligned}
$$

Bounds on time derivatives.
In order to bound the terms $s_0\|\partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{p_p}\|^2_{\mathrm{W}_p}$ and $\|\partial_t A^{1/2}(\mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p} + \alpha_p \mathbf{e}^h_{p_p}\mathbf{I})\|^2_{\mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_p)}$ in the right-hand side of (5.37), we differentiate in time the whole system (5.29), test with $\mathbf{q}_h = (\partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p}, \partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{p_p}, \partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_p}, \partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{T}_f},$

$\partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_f}, \partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\theta}})$ and $\mathbf{s}_h = (\partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_\lambda, \partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_s}, \partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\gamma}_p})$ and proceed similarly to (5.31), to find that

$$\begin{aligned}
&\frac{1}{2} s_0\, \partial_t\, (\partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{p_p}, \partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{p_p})_{\Omega_p} + \frac{1}{2} \partial_t\, a_e(\partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p}, \partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{p_p}; \partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p}, \partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{p_p}) + a_p(\partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_p}, \partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_p}) \\
&\quad + a_f(\partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{T}_f}, \partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_f}; \partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{T}_f}, \partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_f}) + \kappa_{\partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_f}}(\mathbf{T}_f, \mathbf{u}_f; \partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{T}_f}, \partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_f}) \\
&\quad + \kappa_{\mathbf{u}_{fh}}(\partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{T}_f}, \partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_f}; \partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{T}_f}, \partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_f}) + a_{\mathtt{BJS}}(\partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_f}, \partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\theta}}; \partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_f}, \partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\theta}}) \\
&= - a_e(\partial_{tt}\, \mathbf{e}^I_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p}, \partial_{tt}\, \mathbf{e}^I_{p_p}; \partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p}, \partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{p_p}) - a_p(\partial_t \mathbf{e}^I_{\mathbf{u}_p}, \partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_p}) - a_f(\partial_t \mathbf{e}^I_{\mathbf{T}_f}, \partial_t \mathbf{e}^I_{\mathbf{u}_f}, \partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{T}_f}, \partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_f}) \\
&\quad - \kappa_{\partial_t \mathbf{u}_{fh}}(\mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{T}_f}, \mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_f}; \partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{T}_f}, \partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_f}) - \kappa_{\mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_f}}(\partial_t \mathbf{T}_f, \partial_t \mathbf{u}_f; \partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{T}_f}, \partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_f}) - \kappa_{\partial_t \mathbf{e}^I_{\mathbf{u}_f}}(\mathbf{T}_f, \mathbf{u}_f; \partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{T}_f}, \partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_f}) \\
&\quad - \kappa_{\partial_t \mathbf{u}_{fh}}(\mathbf{e}^I_{\mathbf{T}_f}, \mathbf{e}^I_{\mathbf{u}_f}; \partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{T}_f}, \partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_f}) - \kappa_{\mathbf{e}^I_{\mathbf{u}_f}}(\partial_t \mathbf{T}_f, \partial_t \mathbf{u}_f; \partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{T}_f}, \partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_f}) - \kappa_{\mathbf{u}_{fh}}(\partial_t \mathbf{e}^I_{\mathbf{T}_f}, \partial_t \mathbf{e}^I_{\mathbf{u}_f}; \partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{T}_f}, \partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_f}) \\
&\quad - a_{\mathtt{BJS}}(\partial_t \mathbf{e}^I_{\mathbf{u}_f}, \partial_t \mathbf{e}^I_{\boldsymbol{\theta}}; \partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_f}, \partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\theta}}) - b_{\mathrm{sk}}(\partial_t \mathbf{e}^I_{\boldsymbol{\gamma}_p}, \partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p}) - \langle \partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_f} \cdot \mathbf{n}_f, \partial_t \mathbf{e}^I_\lambda \rangle_{\Gamma_{fp}} + \langle \partial_t \mathbf{e}^I_{\mathbf{u}_f} \cdot \mathbf{n}_f, \partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_\lambda \rangle_{\Gamma_{fp}} \\
&\quad + \langle \partial_t \mathbf{e}^I_{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \cdot \mathbf{n}_p, \partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_\lambda \rangle_{\Gamma_{fp}} + b_{\mathrm{sk}}(\partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\gamma}_p}, \partial_t \mathbf{e}^I_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p}) + \langle \partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \cdot \mathbf{n}_p, \partial_t \mathbf{e}^I_\lambda \rangle_{\Gamma_{fp}},
\end{aligned} \tag{5.38}$$

where, using again the projection properties (5.22) and (5.24)–(5.25), and the fact that $\mathbf{div}(\mathbb{X}_{ph}) = \mathbf{V}_{sh}$, $\mathrm{div}(\mathbf{V}_{ph}) = \mathrm{W}_{ph}$, cf. (5.1), we have dropped from (5.38) the following terms:

$$s_0(\partial_{tt}\, \mathbf{e}^I_{p_p}, \partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{p_p})_{\Omega_p},\ b_p(\partial_t \mathbf{e}^I_{p_p}, \partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_p}),\ b_p(\partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{p_p}, \partial_t \mathbf{e}^I_{\mathbf{u}_p}),\ b_{\mathbf{n}_p}(\partial_t \mathbf{e}^I_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p}, \partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\theta}}),\ b_{\mathbf{n}_p}(\partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p}, \partial_t \mathbf{e}^I_{\boldsymbol{\theta}}),$$
$$b_s(\partial_t \mathbf{e}^I_{\mathbf{u}_s}, \partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p}),\ b_s(\partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_s}, \partial_t \mathbf{e}^I_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p}),\ \langle \partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_p} \cdot \mathbf{n}_p, \partial_t \mathbf{e}^I_\lambda \rangle_{\Gamma_{fp}},\ \langle \partial_t \mathbf{e}^I_{\mathbf{u}_p} \cdot \mathbf{n}_p, \partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_\lambda \rangle_{\Gamma_{fp}}.$$

We next comment on the control of the terms involving the functional $\kappa_{\mathbf{w}_f}$. The two terms on the left are controlled by $a_f(\partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{T}_f}, \partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_f}; \partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{T}_f}, \partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_f})$, using that $\mathbf{u}_f(t), \mathbf{u}_{fh}(t) \in \mathbf{W}_r$, the continuity of $\kappa_{\mathbf{w}_f}$ (3.20) and the coercivity bound for a_f (3.32). The two terms on the right involving $\mathbf{u}_f$ and $\mathbf{u}_{fh}$, using that $\mathbf{u}_f(t), \mathbf{u}_{fh}(t) \in \mathbf{W}_r$, as well as the Cauchy–Schwarz and Young inequalities, are bounded by $\delta \|(\partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{T}_f}, \partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_f})\|^2 + C\|(\partial_t \mathbf{e}^I_{\mathbf{T}_f}, \partial_t \mathbf{e}^I_{\mathbf{u}_f})\|^2$. The other four terms are bounded by $\delta \|(\partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{T}_f}, \partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_f})\|^2 + C(\|\partial_t \mathbf{u}_f\|^2_{\mathbf{V}_f} + \|\partial_t \mathbf{u}_{fh}\|^2_{\mathbf{V}_f})(\|\mathbf{e}^I_{\mathbf{u}_f}\|^2_{\mathbf{V}_f} + \|\mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_f}\|^2_{\mathbf{V}_f})$. We also use the following identities to control the last two terms in (5.38):

$$b_{\mathrm{sk}}(\partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\gamma}_p}, \partial_t \mathbf{e}^I_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p}) = \partial_t\, b_{\mathrm{sk}}(\mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\gamma}_p}, \partial_t \mathbf{e}^I_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p}) - b_{\mathrm{sk}}(\mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\gamma}_p}, \partial_{tt} \mathbf{e}^I_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p}),$$

$$\langle \partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \cdot \mathbf{n}_p, \partial_t \mathbf{e}^I_\lambda \rangle_{\Gamma_{fp}} = \partial_t \langle \mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \cdot \mathbf{n}_p, \partial_t \mathbf{e}^I_\lambda \rangle_{\Gamma_{fp}} - \langle \mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \cdot \mathbf{n}_p, \partial_{tt} \mathbf{e}^I_\lambda \rangle_{\Gamma_{fp}}.$$

Then, integrating (5.38) for 0 to $t \in (0, T]$, proceeding as in (5.34), using that $\mathbf{u}_f(t), \mathbf{u}_{fh}(t) \in \mathbf{W}_r$, the bounds (3.19)–(3.20) and (3.29)–(3.30), the Cauchy–Schwarz and Young inequalities and the estimate

$$b_{\mathrm{sk}}(\partial_t \mathbf{e}^I_{\boldsymbol{\gamma}_p}, \partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p}) \leq C\, \|\partial_t \mathbf{e}^I_{\boldsymbol{\gamma}_p}\|_{\mathbb{Q}_p} \Big(\|\partial_t A^{1/2}(\mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p} + \alpha_p \mathbf{e}^h_{p_p} \mathbf{I})\|_{\mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_p)} + \|\partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{p_p}\|_{\mathrm{W}_p} \Big),$$

which follows analogously to (5.33), we get

$$
\begin{aligned}
& s_0\|\partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{p_p}(t)\|^2_{\mathrm{W}_p} + \|\partial_t A^{1/2}(\mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p} + \alpha_p \mathbf{e}^h_{p_p}\mathbf{I})(t)\|^2_{\mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_p)} \\
&\quad + \int_0^t \left(\|\partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_p}\|^2_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_p)} + \|(\partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{T}_f}, \partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_f})\|^2 + |\partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_f} - \partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\theta}}|^2_{\mathtt{BJS}} \right) \mathrm{d}s \\
& \leq C \Bigg(\int_0^t \Big(\|\partial_{tt} A^{1/2}(\mathbf{e}^I_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p} + \alpha_p \mathbf{e}^I_{p_p}\mathbf{I})\|^2_{\mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_p)} + \|\partial_{tt}\mathbf{e}^I_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p}\|^2_{\mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_p)} + \|\partial_t \mathbf{e}^I_{\mathbf{u}_p}\|^2_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_p)} + \|(\partial_t \mathbf{e}^I_{\mathbf{T}_f}, \partial_t \mathbf{e}^I_{\mathbf{u}_f})\|^2 \\
&\quad + |\partial_t \mathbf{e}^I_{\mathbf{u}_f} - \partial_t \mathbf{e}^I_{\boldsymbol{\theta}}|^2_{\mathtt{BJS}} + \|\partial_t \mathbf{e}^I_{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\|^2_{\boldsymbol{\Lambda}_{sh}} + \|\partial_t \mathbf{e}^I_{\lambda}\|^2_{\Lambda_{ph}} + \|\partial_{tt} \mathbf{e}^I_{\lambda}\|^2_{\Lambda_{ph}} + \|\partial_t \mathbf{e}^I_{\boldsymbol{\gamma}_p}\|^2_{\mathbb{Q}_p} \Big) \mathrm{d}s + \|\partial_t \mathbf{e}^I_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p}(t)\|^2_{\mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_p)} \\
&\quad + \|\partial_t \mathbf{e}^I_{\lambda}(t)\|^2_{\Lambda_{ph}} + \|\partial_t \mathbf{e}^I_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p}(0)\|^2_{\mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_p)} + \|\partial_t \mathbf{e}^I_{\lambda}(0)\|^2_{\Lambda_{ph}} \Bigg) + \delta_3 \Bigg(\int_0^t \Big(\|\partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{p_p}\|^2_{\mathrm{W}_p} + \|(\partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{T}_f}, \partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_f})\|^2 \\
&\quad + \|\mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\|^2_{\boldsymbol{\Lambda}_{sh}} + \|\mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\gamma}_p}\|^2_{\mathbb{Q}_p} + \|\partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{\lambda}\|^2_{\Lambda_{ph}} \Big) \mathrm{d}s + \|\mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\theta}}(t)\|^2_{\boldsymbol{\Lambda}_{sh}} + \|\mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\gamma}_p}(t)\|^2_{\mathbb{Q}_p} \Bigg) \\
&\quad + C \Bigg(\int_0^t \|\partial_t A^{1/2}(\mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p} + \alpha_p \mathbf{e}^h_{p_p}\mathbf{I})\|^2_{\mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_p)} \mathrm{d}s + s_0\|\partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{p_p}(0)\|^2_{\mathrm{W}_p} + \|\partial_t A^{1/2}(\mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p} + \alpha_p \mathbf{e}^h_{p_p}\mathbf{I})(0)\|^2_{\mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_p)} \\
&\quad + \|\mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\theta}}(0)\|^2_{\boldsymbol{\Lambda}_{sh}} + \|\mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\gamma}_p}(0)\|^2_{\mathbb{Q}_p} + \int_0^t \left(\|\partial_t \mathbf{u}_f\|^2_{\mathbf{V}_f} + \|\partial_t \mathbf{u}_{fh}\|^2_{\mathbf{V}_f} \right) \left(\|\mathbf{e}^I_{\mathbf{u}_f}\|^2_{\mathbf{V}_f} + \|\mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_f}\|^2_{\mathbf{V}_f} \right) \mathrm{d}s \Bigg). \qquad (5.39)
\end{aligned}
$$

Note that for the last term we can use the fact that both $\|\partial_t \mathbf{u}_f\|_{\mathrm{L}^2(0,T;\mathbf{V}_f)}$ and $\|\partial_t \mathbf{u}_{fh}\|_{\mathrm{L}^2(0,T;\mathbf{V}_f)}$ are bounded by data (cf. (4.56), (5.21)), to obtain

$$
\int_0^t \left(\|\partial_t \mathbf{u}_f\|^2_{\mathbf{V}_f} + \|\partial_t \mathbf{u}_{fh}\|^2_{\mathbf{V}_f} \right) \left(\|\mathbf{e}^I_{\mathbf{u}_f}\|^2_{\mathbf{V}_f} + \|\mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_f}\|^2_{\mathbf{V}_f} \right) \mathrm{d}s \leq C \left(\|\mathbf{e}^I_{\mathbf{u}_f}\|^2_{\mathrm{L}^\infty(0,t;\mathbf{V}_f)} + \|\mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_f}\|^2_{\mathrm{L}^\infty(0,t;\mathbf{V}_f)} \right). \qquad (5.40)
$$

In turn, testing (5.29) with $\mathbf{q}_h = (\mathbf{0}, 0, \mathbf{0}, \partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{T}_f}, \partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_f}, \mathbf{0})$ and using that $\mathbf{u}_f(t), \mathbf{u}_{fh}(t) \in \mathbf{W}_r$, we deduce

$$
\begin{aligned}
\|(\mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{T}_f}, \mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_f})(t)\|^2 \;&\leq\; C\,(1+r) \int_0^t \left(\|(\mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{T}_f}, \mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_f})\|^2 + \|(\mathbf{e}^I_{\mathbf{T}_f}, \mathbf{e}^I_{\mathbf{u}_f})\|^2 + \|\mathbf{e}_{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\|^2_{\boldsymbol{\Lambda}_{sh}} + \|\mathbf{e}_{\lambda}\|^2_{\Lambda_{ph}} \right) \mathrm{d}s \\
&\quad + \|(\mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{T}_f}, \mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_f})(0)\|^2 + \delta_4 \int_0^t \|(\partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{T}_f}, \partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_f})\|^2 \,\mathrm{d}s,
\end{aligned}
$$

which implies

$$
\begin{aligned}
\|(\mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{T}_f}, \mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_f})\|^2_{\mathrm{L}^\infty(0,t;\mathbb{X}_f\times\mathbf{V}_f)} \;&\leq\; C \int_0^t \Big(\|(\mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{T}_f}, \mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_f})\|^2 + \|(\mathbf{e}^I_{\mathbf{T}_f}, \mathbf{e}^I_{\mathbf{u}_f})\|^2 + \|\mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\|^2_{\boldsymbol{\Lambda}_{sh}} + \|\mathbf{e}^h_{\lambda}\|^2_{\Lambda_{ph}} \\
&\quad + \|\mathbf{e}^I_{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\|^2_{\boldsymbol{\Lambda}_{sh}} + \|\mathbf{e}^I_{\lambda}\|^2_{\Lambda_{ph}} \Big) \mathrm{d}s + \|(\mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{T}_f}, \mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_f})(0)\|^2 + \delta_4 \int_0^t \|(\partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{T}_f}, \partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_f})\|^2 \,\mathrm{d}s.
\end{aligned} \qquad (5.41)
$$

We further utilize the inf-sup condition bound given in the first equation in (5.35), as well as the bound

$$
\int_0^t \left(\|\partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{p_p}\|^2_{\mathrm{W}_p} + \|\partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{\lambda}\|^2_{\Lambda_{ph}} \right) \mathrm{d}s \leq C \int_0^t \left(\|\partial_t \mathbf{e}^I_{\mathbf{u}_p}\|^2_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_p)} + \|\partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_p}\|^2_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_p)} \right) \mathrm{d}s, \qquad (5.42)
$$

which follows similarly to the second equation in (5.35). In addition, noting that the term $\int_0^t \|\mathbf{e}_\lambda^h\|^2_{\Lambda_{ph}}\,\mathrm{d}s$ on the right-hand side of (5.41) needs to be controlled by Grönwall's inequality, we utilize Sobolev embedding to obtain

$$\|\mathbf{e}_\lambda^h(t)\|^2_{\Lambda_{ph}} \le C\int_0^t \left(\|\mathbf{e}_\lambda^h\|^2_{\Lambda_{ph}} + \|\partial_t\mathbf{e}_\lambda^h\|^2_{\Lambda_{ph}}\right)\mathrm{d}s. \tag{5.43}$$

We now combine (5.37) with (5.39)–(5.43) and the first equation in (5.35). We use Grönwall's inequality to control the terms

$$\int_0^t \left(\|A^{1/2}(\mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p} + \alpha_p\mathbf{e}^h_{p_p}\mathbf{I})\|^2_{\mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_p)} + s_0\|\partial_t\mathbf{e}^h_{p_p}\|^2_{\mathrm{W}_p} + \|\partial_t A^{1/2}(\mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p} + \alpha_p\mathbf{e}^h_{p_p}\mathbf{I})\|^2_{\mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_p)}\right)\mathrm{d}s,$$

which appear in (5.37), and the terms

$$\int_0^t \left(\|(\mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{T}_f},\mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_f})\|^2 + \|\mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\|^2_{\boldsymbol{\Lambda}_{sh}} + \|\mathbf{e}^h_\lambda\|^2_{\Lambda_{ph}}\right)\mathrm{d}s,$$

which appear in (5.41), and choose δ_3, δ_4 small enough, to obtain

$$\begin{aligned}
& s_0\|\mathbf{e}^h_{p_p}(t)\|^2_{\mathrm{W}_p} + s_0\|\partial_t\mathbf{e}^h_{p_p}(t)\|^2_{\mathrm{W}_p} + \|A^{1/2}(\mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p} + \alpha_p\mathbf{e}^h_{p_p}\mathbf{I})(t)\|^2_{\mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_p)} + \|\mathbf{div}(\mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p})\|^2_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_p)} \\
&\quad + \|\partial_t A^{1/2}(\mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p} + \alpha_p\mathbf{e}^h_{p_p}\mathbf{I})(t)\|^2_{\mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_p)} + \|\mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_s}(t)\|^2_{\mathbf{V}_s} + \|\mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\gamma}_p}(t)\|^2_{\mathbb{Q}_p} + \|\mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\theta}}(t)\|^2_{\boldsymbol{\Lambda}_{sh}} + \|\mathbf{e}^h_\lambda(t)\|^2_{\Lambda_{ph}} \\
&\quad + \int_0^t \Big(\|\mathbf{e}^h_{p_p}\|^2_{\mathrm{W}_p} + \|\partial_t\mathbf{e}^h_{p_p}\|^2_{\mathrm{W}_p} + \|\mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_p}\|^2_{\mathbf{V}_p} + \|\partial_t\mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_p}\|^2_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_p)} + \|(\mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{T}_f},\mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_f})\|^2 + \|(\partial_t\mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{T}_f},\partial_t\mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_f})\|^2 \\
&\quad + |\mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_f} - \mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\theta}}|^2_{\mathtt{BJS}} + |\partial_t\mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_f} - \partial_t\mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\theta}}|^2_{\mathtt{BJS}} + \|\mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\|^2_{\boldsymbol{\Lambda}_{sh}} + \|\mathbf{e}^h_\lambda\|^2_{\Lambda_{ph}} + \|\partial_t\mathbf{e}^h_\lambda\|^2_{\Lambda_{ph}} + \|\mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_s}\|^2_{\mathbf{V}_s} + \|\mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\gamma}_p}\|^2_{\mathbb{Q}_p}\Big)\mathrm{d}s \\
&\le C\exp(T)\Bigg(\int_0^t \Big(\|\partial_t A^{1/2}(\mathbf{e}^I_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p} + \alpha_p\mathbf{e}^I_{p_p}\mathbf{I})\|^2_{\mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_p)} + \|\partial_{tt}A^{1/2}(\mathbf{e}^I_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p} + \alpha_p\mathbf{e}^I_{p_p}\mathbf{I})\|^2_{\mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_p)} + \|\partial_{tt}\mathbf{e}^I_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p}\|^2_{\mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_p)} \\
&\quad + \|\mathbf{e}^I_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p}\|^2_{\mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_p)} + \|\mathbf{e}^I_{\mathbf{u}_p}\|^2_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_p)} + \|\partial_t\mathbf{e}^I_{\mathbf{u}_p}\|^2_{\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_p)} + \|(\mathbf{e}^I_{\mathbf{T}_f},\mathbf{e}^I_{\mathbf{u}_f})\|^2 + \|(\partial_t\mathbf{e}^I_{\mathbf{T}_f},\partial_t\mathbf{e}_{\mathbf{u}_f})\|^2 \\
&\quad + |\mathbf{e}^I_{\mathbf{u}_f} - \mathbf{e}^I_{\boldsymbol{\theta}}|^2_{\mathtt{BJS}} + |\partial_t\mathbf{e}^I_{\mathbf{u}_f} - \partial_t\mathbf{e}^I_{\boldsymbol{\theta}}|^2_{\mathtt{BJS}} + \|\mathbf{e}^I_{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\|^2_{\boldsymbol{\Lambda}_{sh}} + \|\partial_t\mathbf{e}^I_{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\|^2_{\boldsymbol{\Lambda}_{sh}} + \|\mathbf{e}^I_\lambda\|^2_{\Lambda_{ph}} + \|\partial_t\mathbf{e}^I_\lambda\|^2_{\Lambda_{ph}} + \|\partial_{tt}\mathbf{e}^I_\lambda\|^2_{\Lambda_{ph}} \\
&\quad + \|\mathbf{e}^I_{\boldsymbol{\gamma}_p}\|^2_{\mathbb{Q}_p} + \|\partial_t\mathbf{e}^I_{\boldsymbol{\gamma}_p}\|^2_{\mathbb{Q}_p}\Big)\mathrm{d}s + \|\mathbf{e}^I_{\mathbf{u}_f}\|^2_{\mathrm{L}^\infty(0,t;\mathbf{V}_f)} + \|\partial_t\mathbf{e}^I_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p}(t)\|^2_{\mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_p)} + \|\partial_t\mathbf{e}^I_\lambda(t)\|^2_{\Lambda_{ph}} + \|\partial_t\mathbf{e}^I_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p}(0)\|^2_{\mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_p)} \\
&\quad + \|\partial_t\mathbf{e}^I_\lambda(0)\|^2_{\Lambda_{ph}} + s_0\|\mathbf{e}^h_{p_p}(0)\|^2_{\mathrm{W}_p} + \|A^{1/2}(\mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p} + \alpha_p\mathbf{e}^h_{p_p}\mathbf{I})(0)\|^2_{\mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_p)} + \|(\mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{T}_f},\mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_f})(0)\|^2 + \|\mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\theta}}(0)\|^2_{\boldsymbol{\Lambda}_{sh}} \\
&\quad + \|\mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\gamma}_p}(0)\|^2_{\mathbb{Q}_p} + s_0\|\partial_t\mathbf{e}^h_{p_p}(0)\|^2_{\mathrm{W}_p} + \|\partial_t A^{1/2}(\mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p} + \alpha_p\mathbf{e}^h_{p_p}\mathbf{I})(0)\|^2_{\mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_p)}\Bigg).
\end{aligned} \tag{5.44}$$

Bounds on initial data.
Finally, to bound the initial data terms in (5.44), we recall from Theorems 4.12 and 5.6 that $(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p(0), p_p(0), \mathbf{u}_p(0), \mathbf{T}_f(0), \mathbf{u}_f(0), \boldsymbol{\theta}(0), \lambda(0)) = (\boldsymbol{\sigma}_{p,0}, p_{p,0}, \mathbf{u}_{p,0}, \mathbf{T}_{f,0}, \mathbf{u}_{f,0}, \boldsymbol{\theta}_0, \lambda_0)$ and $(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_{ph}(0), p_{ph}(0), \mathbf{u}_{ph}(0), \mathbf{T}_{fh}(0), \mathbf{u}_{fh}(0), \boldsymbol{\theta}_h(0), \lambda_h(0)) = (\boldsymbol{\sigma}_{ph,0}, p_{ph,0}, \mathbf{u}_{ph,0}, \mathbf{T}_{fh,0}, \mathbf{u}_{fh,0}, \boldsymbol{\theta}_{h,0}, \lambda_{h,0})$, respectively. Note that $\mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\theta}}(0) = 0$ by definition of $\boldsymbol{\theta}_{h,0}$ (c.f. (5.11)). Recall also that the discrete initial data satisfy (5.13) and (5.15). Then, in a way similar to (5.14) and (5.16), we obtain

$$\begin{aligned}
&\|\mathbf{e}^h_{p_p}(0)\|_{\mathrm{W}_p} + \|A^{1/2}(\mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p} + \alpha_p \mathbf{e}^h_{p_p}\mathbf{I})(0)\|_{\mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_p)} + \|(\mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{T}_f}, \mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_f})(0)\| \\
&\quad \le C\big(\|\mathbf{e}^I_{\mathbf{p}}(0)\|_{\mathbf{Q}} + \|\mathbf{e}^I_\lambda(0)\|_{\Lambda_{ph}} + \|\mathbf{e}^I_{\boldsymbol{\rho}_p}(0)\|_{\mathbb{Q}_p}\big). \qquad (5.45)
\end{aligned}$$

Next, we differentiate in time the equations in (5.29) with test functions $\mathbf{v}_{sh}$ and $\boldsymbol{\chi}_{ph}$ and combine them with the equations with test functions $\boldsymbol{\tau}_{ph}$ and w_{ph} at $t = 0$. Choosing $(\boldsymbol{\tau}_{ph}, w_{ph}, \mathbf{v}_{sh}, \boldsymbol{\chi}_{ph}) = (\partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p}(0), \partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{p_p}(0), \mathbf{e}^h_{\mathbf{u}_s}(0), \mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\gamma}_p}(0))$, we obtain

$$\begin{aligned}
&s_0\|\partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{p_p}(0)\|^2_{\mathrm{W}_p} + \|\partial_t A^{1/2}(\mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p} + \alpha_p \mathbf{e}^h_{p_p}\mathbf{I})(0)\|^2_{\mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_p)} \\
&\quad = -\,(\partial_t A \mathbf{e}^I_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p}(0), \partial_t(\mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p} + \alpha_p \mathbf{e}^h_{p_p}\mathbf{I})(0))_{\Omega_p} - (\alpha_p \mathbf{e}^I_{p_p}\mathbf{I}(0), \partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p}(0))_{\Omega_p} \\
&\qquad - (\mathbf{e}^I_{\boldsymbol{\gamma}_p}(0), \partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p}(0))_{\Omega_p} - (\partial_t \mathbf{e}^I_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p}(0), \mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\gamma}_p}(0))_{\Omega_p},
\end{aligned}$$

where we have used the orthogonality properties (5.22), (5.24) and (5.25), as well as $b_p(w_{ph}, \mathbf{u}_{p,0} - \mathbf{u}_{ph,0}) = 0 \; \forall\, w_{ph} \in W_{ph}$ (cf. (5.13)). Using the Cauchy–Schwarz and Young inequalities for the terms on the right-hand side, as well as (5.42) at $t = 0$ to control $\|\mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\gamma}_p}(0)\|_{\mathbb{Q}_p}$, we deduce

$$\begin{aligned}
&s_0\|\partial_t \mathbf{e}^h_{p_p}(0)\|^2_{\mathrm{W}_p} + \|\partial_t A^{1/2}(\mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p} + \alpha_p \mathbf{e}^h_{p_p}\mathbf{I})(0)\|^2_{\mathbb{L}^2(\Omega_p)} + \|\mathbf{e}^h_{\boldsymbol{\gamma}_p}(0)\|^2_{\mathbb{Q}_p} \\
&\quad \le C\left(\left(1 + \frac{1}{s_0}\right)\|\partial_t \mathbf{e}^I_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p}(0)\|^2_{\mathbb{X}_p} + \|\partial_t \mathbf{e}^I_{p_p}(0)\|^2_{\mathrm{W}_p} + \|\mathbf{e}^I_{\boldsymbol{\gamma}_p}(0)\|^2_{\mathbb{Q}_p}\right). \qquad (5.46)
\end{aligned}$$

Thus, combining (5.44) with (5.45) and (5.46), making use of triangle inequality and the approximation properties (5.23), (5.26) and (5.27), we obtain (5.30). □

REMARK 5.9 The only dependence on $\frac{1}{s_0}$ of the constant C in the error estimate (5.30) comes from the term $\frac{1}{\sqrt{s_0}}\|\partial_t \mathbf{e}^I_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p}(0)\|_{\mathbb{X}_p}$ in (5.46).

5.3 *Fully discrete scheme*

For the fully discrete scheme utilized in the numerical tests, we employ the backward Euler method for the time discretization. Let Δt be the time step, $T = N\Delta t$, $t_m = m\,\Delta t$, $m = 0, \ldots, N$. Let $d_t\, u^m := (\Delta t)^{-1}(u^m - u^{m-1})$ be the first order (backward) discrete time derivative, where $u^m := u(t_m)$. Then the fully discrete model reads: given $(\mathbf{p}^0_h, \mathbf{r}^0_h) = (\mathbf{p}_{h,0}, \mathbf{r}_{h,0})$ satisfying (5.9), find $(\mathbf{p}^m_h, \mathbf{r}^m_h) \in \mathbf{Q}_h \times \mathbf{S}_h$,

$m = 1, \ldots, N$, such that

$$d_t \mathcal{E}(\mathbf{p}_h^m)(\mathbf{q}_h) + (\mathcal{A} + \mathcal{K}_{\mathbf{u}_{fh}^m})(\mathbf{p}_h^m)(\mathbf{q}_h) + \mathcal{B}'(\mathbf{r}_h^m)(\mathbf{q}_h) = \mathbf{F}^m(\mathbf{q}_h) \quad \forall\, \mathbf{q}_h \in \mathbf{Q}_h,$$
$$-\mathcal{B}(\mathbf{p}_h^m)(\mathbf{s}_h) = \mathbf{G}(\mathbf{s}_h) \quad \forall\, \mathbf{s}_h \in \mathbf{S}_h. \qquad (5.47)$$

The fully discrete method results in the solution of a nonlinear algebraic system at each time step. The system is similar to the discrete resolvent system (5.6), which was analyzed in Theorem 4.8. The well posedness and error analysis of the fully discrete scheme is beyond the scope of the paper.

6. Numerical results

In this section, we present numerical results that illustrate the behavior of the fully discrete method (5.47). We use the Newton–Rhapson method to solve this nonlinear algebraic system at each time step. Our implementation is based on a `FreeFem++` code (Hecht, 2012) on triangular grids, in conjunction with the direct linear solver `UMFPACK` Davis (2004). For spatial discretization, we use the following finite element spaces: $\mathbb{BDM}_1 - \mathbf{P}_1$ for stress–velocity in Navier–Stokes, $\mathbb{BDM}_1 - \mathbf{P}_0 - \mathbb{P}_1$ for stress–displacement–rotation in elasticity, $\mathbf{BDM}_1 - \mathrm{P}_0$ for Darcy velocity–pressure and $\mathbf{P}_1^{\mathrm{dc}} - \mathrm{P}_1^{\mathrm{dc}}$ for the the traces of structure velocity and Darcy pressure, where $\mathrm{P}_1^{\mathrm{dc}}$ denotes discontinuous piecewise linear polynomials.

The examples considered in this section are described next. Example 1 is used to corroborate the rates of convergence. In Example 2, we present a simulation of blood flow in an arterial bifurcation. Air flow through a filter is simulated in Example 3. In all examples, we set $\kappa_1 = \frac{1}{2\mu}$ and $\kappa_2 = 2\mu$, cf. Remark 3.4.

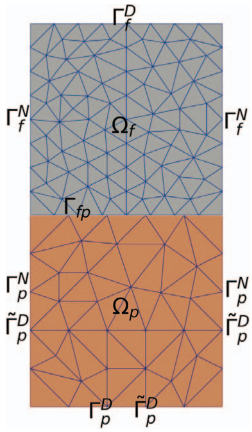
6.1 *Example 1: convergence test*

In this test, we study the convergence for the space discretization using an analytical solution. The domain is $\Omega = \Omega_f \cup \Gamma_{fp} \cup \Omega_p$, with $\Omega_f = (0,1)\times(0,1)$, $\Gamma_{fp} = (0,1)\times\{0\}$ and $\Omega_p = (0,1)\times(-1,0)$; i.e., the upper half is associated with the Navier–Stokes flow, while the lower half represents the poroelastic medium governed by the Biot system, see Fig. 1 (left). The analytical solution is given in Fig. 1 (right). It satisfies the appropriate interface conditions along the interface Γ_{fp}.

The model parameters are

$$\mu = 1, \quad \rho = 1, \quad \lambda_p = 1, \quad \mu_p = 1, \quad s_0 = 1, \quad \mathbf{K} = \mathbf{I}, \quad \alpha_p = 1, \quad \alpha_{\mathtt{BJS}} = 1.$$

The right-hand side functions $\mathbf{f}_f, \mathbf{f}_p$ and q_p are computed from (2.1)–(2.8) using the analytical solution. The model problem is then complemented with the appropriate boundary conditions, as shown in Fig. 1 (left), and initial data. Notice that the boundary conditions are not homogeneous and therefore the right-hand side of the resulting system must be modified accordingly. The total simulation time for this test case is $T = 0.01$ and the time step is $\Delta t = 10^{-3}$. The time step is sufficiently small, so that the time discretization error does not affect the spatial convergence rates. Table 1 shows the convergence history for a sequence of quasi-uniform mesh refinements, where h_f and h_p denote the mesh sizes in Ω_f and Ω_p, respectively. The grids are nonmatching on the interface Γ_{fp}, see Fig. 1 (left) for the coarsest level, with the mesh sizes for their traces, denoted by h_{tf} and h_{tp}, satisfying $h_{tf} = \frac{5}{8} h_{tp}$. We note that the Navier–Stokes pressure and displacement at t_m are recovered by the post-processed formulae



Solution in the Navier–Stokes region:

$$\mathbf{u}_f = \exp(t)\begin{pmatrix} \sin(\pi x)\cos(\pi y) \\ -\sin(\pi y)\cos(\pi x) \end{pmatrix}$$

$$p_f = \exp(t)\,\sin(\pi x)\cos\left(\frac{\pi y}{2}\right) + 2\pi\cos(\pi t)$$

Solution in the Biot region:

$$p_p = \exp(t)\,\sin(\pi x)\cos\left(\frac{\pi y}{2}\right)$$

$$\boldsymbol{\eta}_p = \sin(\pi t)\begin{pmatrix} -3x + \cos(y) \\ y + 1 \end{pmatrix}$$

FIG. 1. Example 1, Left: computational domain and boundaries. Right: analytical solution.

$p_{fh}^m = -\frac{1}{n}\big(\mathrm{tr}(\mathbf{T}_{fh}^m) + \rho\,\mathrm{tr}(\mathbf{u}_{fh}^m \otimes \mathbf{u}_{fh}^m)\big)$ (cf. (2.3)) and $\boldsymbol{\eta}_{ph}^m = \Delta t\,\mathbf{u}_{sh}^m + \boldsymbol{\eta}_{ph}^{m-1}$, respectively. The results illustrate that at least the optimal spatial rate of convergence $\mathcal{O}(h)$ established in Theorem 5.8 is attained for all subdomain variables. The Lagrange multiplier variables, which are approximated in $\mathbf{P}_1^{\mathrm{dc}} - \mathrm{P}_1^{\mathrm{dc}}$, exhibit a rate of convergence $\mathcal{O}(h^2)$ in the L^2-norm on Γ_{fp}, which is consistent with the order of approximation.

6.2 *Example 2: blood flow in an arterial bifurcation*

In this example, we present a simulation of blood flow in an arterial bifurcation. The Navier–Stokes equations model the flow in the lumen of the artery, whereas the Biot system models the flow in the arterial wall. We use the fully dynamic Navier–Stokes–Biot model, which is better suitable for this application. In particular, the Navier–Stokes momentum equation in the fluid region is

$$\rho\,\partial_t \mathbf{u}_f - \rho(\nabla\mathbf{u}_f)\mathbf{u}_f - \mathbf{div}(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_f) = \mathbf{f}_f \quad \text{in} \quad \Omega_f \times (0,T],$$

and the elasticity equation in the Biot system is

$$\rho_p\,\partial_{tt}\boldsymbol{\eta}_p - \beta\,\boldsymbol{\eta}_p - \mathbf{div}(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p) = \mathbf{f}_p \quad \text{in} \quad \Omega_p \times (0,T],$$

where ρ_p is the fluid density in the poroelastic region. The additional term $\beta\,\boldsymbol{\eta}_p$ comes from the axially symmetric two dimensional formulation, accounting for the recoil due to the circumferential strain (Bukač, 2015a). The physical parameters are chosen based on Bukač (2015a) and fall within the range of physiological values for blood flow:

$$\mu = 0.035 \text{ g/cm-s}, \quad \rho = 1 \text{ g/cm}^3, \quad s_0 = 5\times 10^{-6}\text{ cm}^2\text{/dyn}, \quad \mathbf{K} = 10^{-9}\times\mathbf{I}\text{ cm}^2, \quad \rho_p = 1.1\text{ g/cm}^3,$$

$$\lambda_p = 4.28\times 10^6\text{ dyn/cm}^2, \quad \mu_p = 1.07\times 10^6\text{ dyn/cm}^2, \quad \beta = 5\times 10^7\text{ dyn/cm}^4, \quad \alpha_p = 1, \quad \alpha_{\mathrm{BJS}} = 1.$$

The body force terms $\mathbf{f}_f$ and $\mathbf{f}_p$ and external source q_p are set to zero, as well as the initial conditions. The computational domain and boundary conditions are shown in Fig. 2. We note that the flow is driven

TABLE 1 *Example 1, Mesh sizes, errors, rates of convergences and average Newton iterations for the fully discrete system* $(\mathbb{BDM}_1 - \mathbf{P}_1) - (\mathbb{BDM}_1 - \mathbf{P}_0 - \mathbb{P}_1) - (\mathbf{BDM}_1 - P_0) - (\mathbf{P}_1^{dc} - P_1^{dc})$ *approximation for the Navier–Stokes/Biot model in no-matching grids*

h_f	$\|\mathbf{e}_{\mathbf{T}_f}\|_{\ell^2(0,T;\mathbb{X}_f)}$ error	rate	$\|\mathbf{e}_{\mathbf{u}_f}\|_{\ell^2(0,T;\mathbf{V}_f)}$ error	rate	$\|\mathbf{e}_{p_f}\|_{\ell^2(0,T;\mathrm{L}^2(\Omega_f))}$ error	rate
0.1964	1.79E−01	–	4.57E−02	–	3.42E−03	–
0.0997	9.12E−02	0.9957	2.33E−02	0.9920	1.29E−03	1.4332
0.0487	4.43E−02	1.0057	1.19E−02	0.9451	5.79E−04	1.1208
0.0250	2.23E−02	1.0294	5.91E−03	1.0411	2.32E−04	1.3702
0.0136	1.11E−02	1.1423	2.94E−03	1.1455	1.11E−04	1.2136
0.0072	5.51E−03	1.1066	1.46E−03	1.0997	4.68E−05	1.3551

h_p	$\|\mathbf{e}_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}_p}\|_{\ell^\infty(0,T;\mathbb{X}_p)}$ error	rate	$\|\mathbf{e}_{p_p}\|_{\ell^\infty(0,T;\mathrm{W}_p)}$ error	rate	$\|\mathbf{e}_{\mathbf{u}_p}\|_{\ell^2(0,T;\mathbf{V}_p)}$ error	rate	$\|\mathbf{e}_{\mathbf{u}_s}\|_{\ell^2(0,T;\mathbf{V}_s)}$ error	rate
0.2828	2.73E−01	–	7.54E−02	–	1.04E−01	–	4.31E−02	–
0.1646	1.37E−01	1.2731	3.84E−02	1.2480	5.01E−02	1.3513	2.22E−02	1.2249
0.0779	6.67E−02	0.9650	1.91E−02	0.9328	2.39E−02	0.9888	1.08E−02	0.9616
0.0434	3.37E−02	1.1690	9.39E−03	1.2150	1.16E−02	1.2359	5.41E−03	1.1865
0.0227	1.69E−02	1.0634	4.70E−03	1.0658	5.79E−03	1.0738	2.71E−03	1.0668
0.0124	8.43E−03	1.1462	2.35E−03	1.1429	2.89E−03	1.1452	1.35E−03	1.1456

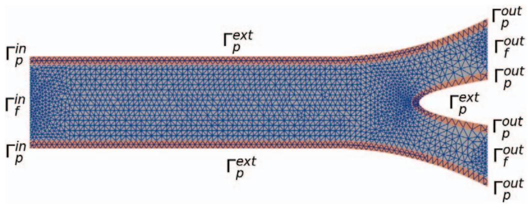
$\|\mathbf{e}_{\boldsymbol{\gamma}_p}\|_{\ell^2(0,T;\mathbb{Q}_p)}$ error	rate	$\|\mathbf{e}_{\eta_p}\|_{\ell^2(0,T;\mathbf{L}^2(\Omega_p))}$ error	rate	h_{tp}	$\|\mathbf{e}_{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\|_{\ell^2(0,T;\mathbf{L}^2(\Gamma_{fp}))}$ error	rate	$\|\mathbf{e}_{\lambda}\|_{\ell^2(0,T;\mathrm{L}^2(\Gamma_{fp}))}$ error	rate	iter
5.02E−02	–	2.67E−04	–	0.2000	6.80E−03	–	1.07E−03	–	2.2
1.41E−02	2.3489	1.38E−04	1.2234	0.1000	2.42E−03	1.4894	2.69E−04	2.0007	2.2
3.01E−03	2.0649	6.72E−05	0.9613	0.0500	5.82E−04	2.0571	6.71E−05	2.0005	2.2
7.27E−04	2.4280	3.36E−05	1.1864	0.0250	1.46E−04	1.9928	1.69E−05	1.9935	2.2
1.80E−04	2.1517	1.68E−05	1.0667	0.0125	3.65E−05	2.0037	4.26E−06	1.9833	2.2
4.80E−05	2.1819	8.40E−06	1.1456	0.0063	9.25E−06	1.9799	1.09E−06	1.9632	2.2

by the time-dependent pressure data on the inflow boundary Γ_f^{in}:

$$p_{in}(t) = \begin{cases} \frac{P_{\max}}{2}\left(1 - \cos\left(\frac{2\pi t}{T_{\max}}\right)\right), & \text{if } t \le T_{\max}; \\ 0, & \text{if } t > T_{\max}, \end{cases} \tag{6.1}$$

where $P_{\max} = 13,334$ dyn/cm^2 and $T_{\max} = 0.003$ s. The total simulation time is $T = 0.006$ s with a time step of size $\Delta t = 10^{-4}$ s. The final time T is chosen so that the pressure wave barely reaches the outflow boundary.

We present the results of a simulation on a grid with a characteristic parameter h four times smaller than that of the grid shown in Fig. 2 (left). We start by emphasizing that the values $s_0 = 5 \times 10^{-6}$ and $\mathbf{K} = 10^{-9} \times \mathbf{I}$ are in the typical locking regime for the Biot system of poroelasticity (Yi, 2017). Our mixed finite element scheme provides a solution free of numerical oscillations, illustrating its locking-free behavior. We display the computed velocity and pressure at times $t = 1.8, 3.6, 5.4$ ms in Fig. 3. On the top row, the arrows represent the velocity vectors $\mathbf{u}_{fh}$ and $\mathbf{u}_{ph}$ in the fluid and poroelastic regions,



$$\boldsymbol{\sigma}_f\,\mathbf{n}_f = -p_{in}\,\mathbf{n}_f \ \text{ on } \ \Gamma_f^{in}, \qquad \boldsymbol{\sigma}_f\,\mathbf{n}_f = \mathbf{0} \ \text{ on } \ \Gamma_f^{out}$$
$$\mathbf{u}_s = \mathbf{0} \ \text{ on } \ \Gamma_p^{in} \cup \Gamma_p^{out}, \qquad \boldsymbol{\sigma}_p\mathbf{n}_p = \mathbf{0} \ \text{ on } \ \Gamma_p^{ext}$$
$$\mathbf{u}_p \cdot \mathbf{n}_p = 0 \ \text{ on } \ \Gamma_p^{in} \cup \Gamma_p^{out}, \qquad p_p = 0 \ \text{ on } \ \Gamma_p^{ext}$$

FIG. 2. Example 2, Left: computational domain and boundaries; arterial lumen Ω_f surrounded by arterial wall Ω_p. Right: boundary conditions.

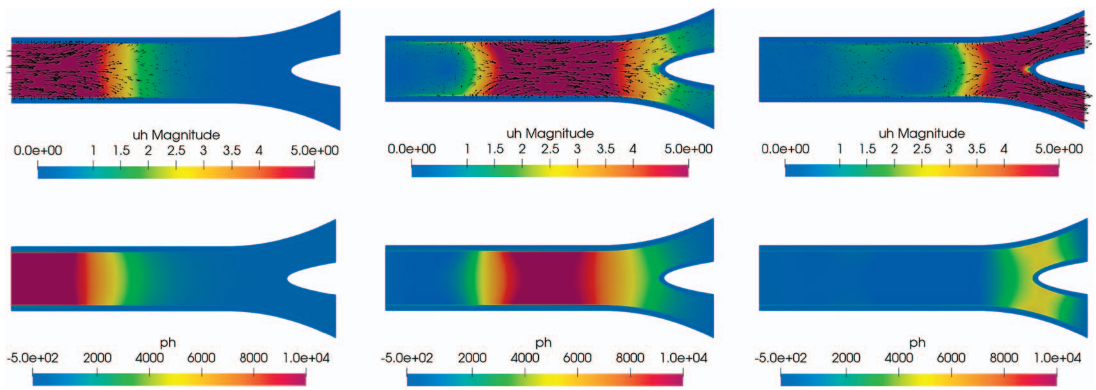


FIG. 3. Example 2, Computed solution at time t = 1.8 ms, t = 3.6 ms and t = 5.4 ms. Top: velocities $\mathbf{u}_{fh}$ and $\mathbf{u}_{ph}$ (arrows), $|\mathbf{u}_{fh}|$ and $|\mathbf{u}_{ph}|$ (color); bottom: pressures p_{fh} and p_{ph} (color). (For interpretation of the colors in the figure(s), the reader is referred to the web version of this article.)

while the color shows the vector magnitude. The bottom plots present the fluid pressure p_{fh} and Darcy pressure p_{ph} in their corresponding regions. One can clearly see a wave propagating from left to right. The blood infiltrates from the lumen into the wall ahead of and near the highest pressure, while it flows back into the lumen after the pressure wave has passed. We also observe singularity of $\mathbf{u}_{fh}$ near the bifurcation of the fluid region at $t = 5.4$ ms, which is typical for such geometry.

In Fig. 4, the first and second rows of the stress tensors $\boldsymbol{\sigma}_{fh}$ and $\boldsymbol{\sigma}_{ph}$ are shown. The fluid stress $\boldsymbol{\sigma}_{fh}$ has been recovered from the formula $\boldsymbol{\sigma}_{fh}^m = \mathbf{T}_{fh}^m + \rho\,(\mathbf{u}_{fh}^m \otimes \mathbf{u}_{fh}^m)$ (cf. (2.2)). We observe large stresses in the region of high pressure as the wave propagates. The continuity of stress across the artery-wall interfaces is also evident. To further illustrate the interface continuity conditions, we present several plots of various components of the solution along the top artery-wall interface in Fig. 5. The top row displays the normal components of the fluid velocity $\mathbf{u}_{fh} \cdot \mathbf{n}_f$, the total poroelastic velocity $-(\mathbf{u}_{ph} + \mathbf{u}_{sh}) \cdot \mathbf{n}_p$, and the Darcy velocity $-\mathbf{u}_{ph} \cdot \mathbf{n}_p$. We observe a good match between $\mathbf{u}_{fh} \cdot \mathbf{n}_f$ and $-(\mathbf{u}_{ph} + \mathbf{u}_{sh}) \cdot \mathbf{n}_p$, as expected from the conservation of mass interface condition, whereas the Darcy velocity $-\mathbf{u}_{ph} \cdot \mathbf{n}_p$ differs. We note that $-\mathbf{u}_{ph} \cdot \mathbf{n}_p$ is significantly smaller that the total velocity $-(\mathbf{u}_{ph} + \mathbf{u}_{sh}) \cdot \mathbf{n}_p$, due to relatively small permeability of the arterial wall. The bottom row shows the fluid wall shear stress $\boldsymbol{\sigma}_{fh}\mathbf{n}_f \cdot \mathbf{t}_f$, the poroelastic shear stress $\boldsymbol{\sigma}_{ph}\mathbf{n}_p \cdot \mathbf{t}_p$ and the normal displacement $-\boldsymbol{\eta}_{ph} \cdot \mathbf{n}_p$. We emphasize that our mixed formulation allows for direct and accurate computation of the wall shear stress, which is an important clinical marker. The profiles of $\boldsymbol{\sigma}_{fh}\mathbf{n}_f \cdot \mathbf{t}_f$ and $\boldsymbol{\sigma}_{ph}\mathbf{n}_p \cdot \mathbf{t}_p$ match, which is consistent with the continuity of normal stress condition. The profiles of the normal displacement at the three different times illustrate

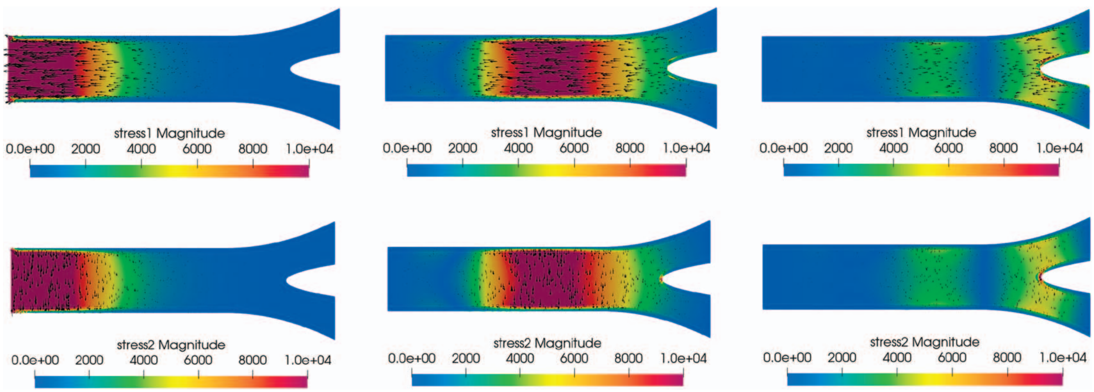


FIG. 4. Example 2, Computed solution at time t = 1.8 ms, t = 3.6 ms and t = 5.4 ms. Top: first row of stresses $(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_{fh,11}, \boldsymbol{\sigma}_{fh,12})^{t}$ and $(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_{ph,11}, \boldsymbol{\sigma}_{ph,12})^{t}$ (arrows) and their magnitudes (color); bottom: second row of stresses $(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_{fh,21}, \boldsymbol{\sigma}_{fh,22})^{t}$ and $(\boldsymbol{\sigma}_{ph,21}, \boldsymbol{\sigma}_{ph,22})^{t}$ (arrows) and their magnitudes (color). (For interpretation of the colors in the figure(s), the reader is referred to the web version of this article.)

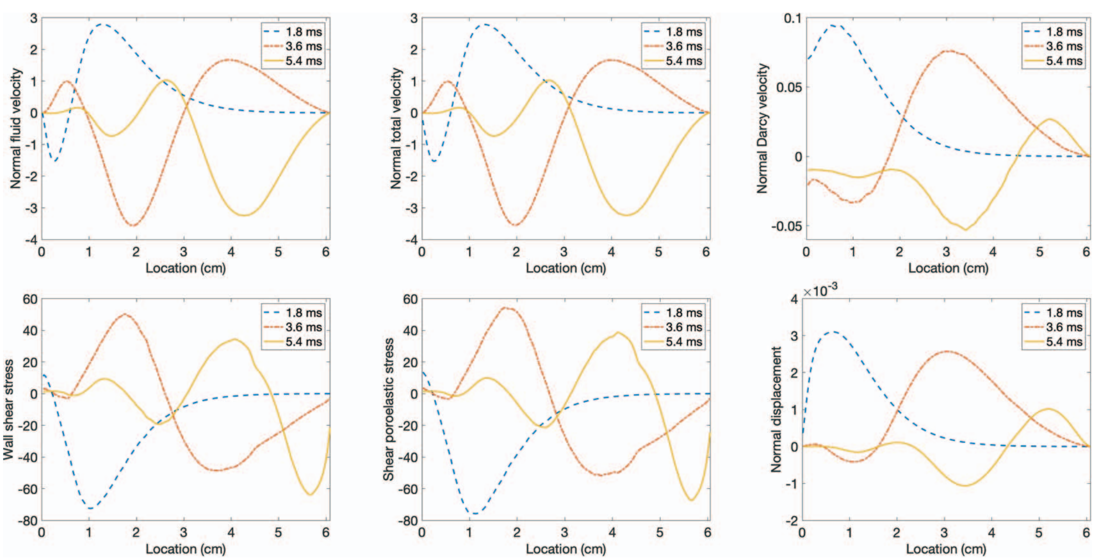
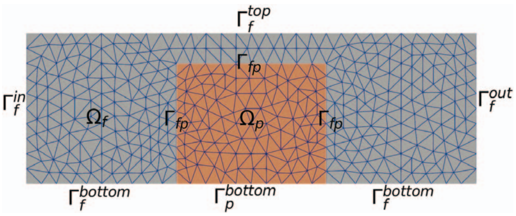


FIG. 5. Example 2, Computed solution on the top interface. Top: $\mathbf{u}_{fh} \cdot \mathbf{n}_f$, $-(\mathbf{u}_{ph} + \mathbf{u}_{sh}) \cdot \mathbf{n}_p$, $-\mathbf{u}_{ph} \cdot \mathbf{n}_p$; bottom: $\boldsymbol{\sigma}_{fh}\mathbf{n}_f \cdot \mathbf{t}_f$, $\boldsymbol{\sigma}_{ph}\mathbf{n}_p \cdot \mathbf{t}_p$, $-\boldsymbol{\eta}_{ph} \cdot \mathbf{n}_p$.

the propagating pressure wave, with large displacement in the regions of large fluid pressure. Moreover, we observe a correlation between the normal Darcy velocity $-\mathbf{u}_{ph} \cdot \mathbf{n}_p$ and the normal displacement $-\boldsymbol{\eta}_{ph} \cdot \mathbf{n}_p$.

6.3 *Example 3: air flow through a filter*

In this example, we simulate air flow through a filter. The setting is similar to the one presented in Schneider *et al.* (2020). We consider a two-dimensional rectangular channel with length 0.75 m and



$$\boldsymbol{\sigma}_f\,\mathbf{n}_f = -p_{in}\,\mathbf{n}_f \quad \text{on} \quad \Gamma_f^{in}$$
$$\boldsymbol{\sigma}_f\,\mathbf{n}_f = -p_{out}\,\mathbf{n}_f \quad \text{on} \quad \Gamma_f^{out}$$
$$p_{in} = p_{ref} + 10^{-9}\text{ kPa}, \quad p_{out} = p_{ref} = 100\text{ kPa}$$
$$\mathbf{u}_f = 0 \quad \text{on} \quad \Gamma_f^{top} \cup \Gamma_f^{bottom}$$
$$\mathbf{u}_s = \mathbf{0} \quad \text{and} \quad \mathbf{u}_p \cdot \mathbf{n}_p = 0 \quad \text{on} \quad \Gamma_p^{bottom}$$

FIG. 6. Example 3, Left: computational domain and boundaries; channel Ω_f in outer region, filter Ω_p in center region. Right: boundary conditions.

width 0.25 m, which on the bottom center is partially blocked by a rectangular poroelastic filter of length 0.25 m and width 0.2 m, see Fig. 6 (left).

The model parameters are set as

$$\mu = 1.81 \times 10^{-8}\text{ kPa s}, \quad \rho = 1.225 \times 10^{-3}\text{ Mg/m}^3, \quad s_0 = 7 \times 10^{-2}\text{ kPa}^{-1},$$
$$\mathbf{K} = [0.505, 0.495; 0.495, 0.505] \times 10^{-6}\text{ m}^2, \quad \alpha_{\mathtt{BJS}} = 1.0, \quad \alpha = 1.0.$$

Note that μ and ρ are parameters for air. The permeability tensor $\mathbf{K}$ is obtained by rotating the identity tensor by a $-45°$ rotation angle in order to consider the effect of material anisotropy on the flow. We further consider two different kinds of material in the poroelastic region: 'hard' material with parameters

$$\lambda_p = 1 \times 10^5\text{ kPa}, \quad \mu_p = 1 \times 10^4\text{ kPa},$$

and 'soft' material with parameters

$$\lambda_p = 1 \times 10^3\text{ kPa}, \quad \mu_p = 1 \times 10^2\text{ kPa}.$$

The top and bottom of the domain are rigid, impermeable walls. The flow is driven by a pressure difference $\Delta p = 10^{-9}$ kPa between the left and right boundary, see Fig. 6 (right) for the boundary conditions. The body force terms $\mathbf{f}_f$ and $\mathbf{f}_p$ and external source q_p are set to zero. For the initial conditions, we consider

$$p_{p,0} = 100\text{ kPa}, \quad \boldsymbol{\sigma}_{p,0} = -\alpha_p\, p_{p,0}\,\mathbf{I}, \quad \mathbf{u}_{f,0} = \mathbf{0}\text{ m/s}.$$

The computational grid has a characteristic parameter h four times smaller than that of the grid shown in Fig. 6 (left). The total simulation time is $T = 80$ s with $\Delta t = 1$ s.

In Figs 7–9, we present various components of the computed solution at the final time. The plots on the left are for the hard material, whereas the plots on the right are for the soft material. Since the pressure variation is small relative to its value, for visualization purpose we plot its difference from the reference pressure, $p_{fh} - p_{ref}$ and $p_{ph} - p_{ref}$ in the corresponding regions. We do the same for the stress tensors, showing $\boldsymbol{\sigma}_{fh} + \alpha\, p_{ref}\mathbf{I}$ and $\boldsymbol{\sigma}_{ph} + \alpha\, p_{ref}\mathbf{I}$, respectively. In addition, the arrows representing the velocity and stress vectors are not scaled with their magnitudes.

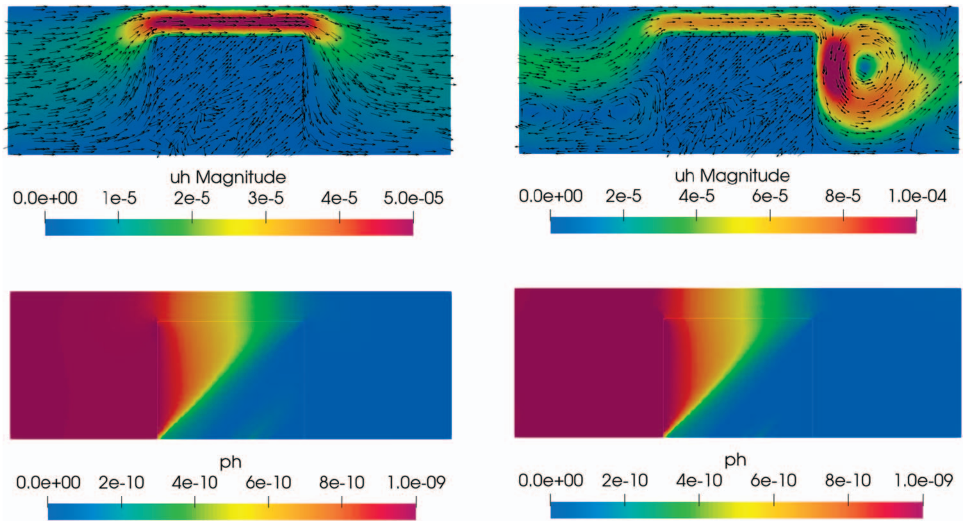


FIG. 7. Computed velocities $\mathbf{u}_{fh}$ and $\mathbf{u}_{ph}$ and pressures $p_{fh}-p_{ref}$ and $p_{ph}-p_{ref}$ for the hard material (left) and soft material (right) at time T = 80 s. Top: velocities (arrows, not scaled) and their magnitudes (color); bottom: pressures (color). (For interpretation of the colors in the figure(s), the reader is referred to the web version of this article.)

The velocity plots in Fig. 7 show that most of the air passes through the constricted section above the filter with higher velocity in this region, due to the flow resistance in the porous medium. The effect of anisotropy is clearly visible in both the pressure and velocity profiles, with the pressure gradient and streamlines following the inclined principal direction of the permeability tensor. We also observe continuous normal velocity across all three interfaces and discontinuous tangential velocity, especially at the interfaces where the Navier–Stokes velocity is higher. This is consistent with the continuity of flux and BJS interface conditions.

Figure 8 shows the first and second rows of the fluid stress tensor $\boldsymbol{\sigma}_{fh}$ and the poroelastic stress tensor $\boldsymbol{\sigma}_{ph}$. The stress is larger in the poroelastic region, especially along the bottom boundary, where the displacement is set to zero. We observe continuity of the first row of the stress on the vertical interfaces and of the second row on the horizontal interface. Thus, the scheme exhibits continuity of the normal stress vector $\boldsymbol{\sigma}_{fh}\mathbf{n}_f + \boldsymbol{\sigma}_{ph}\mathbf{n}_p = 0$, since $\mathbf{n}_f = \pm(1,0)^{\mathrm{t}}$ on the vertical interfaces and $\mathbf{n}_f = -(0,1)^{\mathrm{t}}$ on the horizontal interface.

Furthermore, the elasticity material parameters have a significant effect not only on the displacement field, but also on the velocity field outside of the poroelastic region. In particular, we observe a large vortex behind the obstacle for the soft material, as well as a smaller vortex in front of it, cf. Fig. 7 (right). This is related to both the displacement and the structure velocity having larger magnitude for the soft material, as shown in Fig. 9. We also note that the use of the inertial term in the Navier–Stokes equations plays a critical role for the accurate approximation of the recirculation zones. This example illustrates the ability of the model to capture the interplay between solid deformation and fluid flow, including the effect of material parameters and faster flows. It also shows the importance of including the poroelastic model on resolving critical flow characteristics compared with the Navier–Stokes–Darcy model considered in Schneider *et al.* (2020).

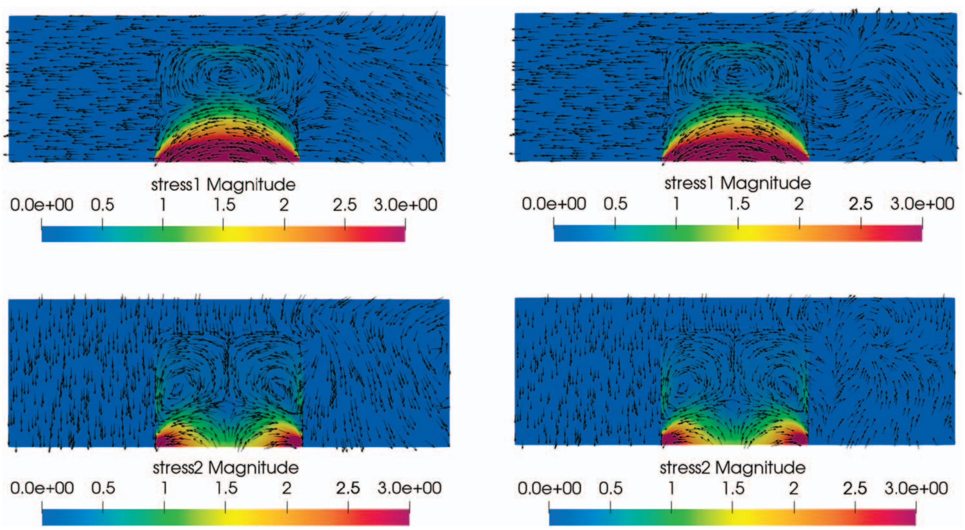


FIG. 8. Computed stress tensors $\boldsymbol{\sigma}_{fh} + \alpha\, p_{ref}\mathbf{I}$ and $\boldsymbol{\sigma}_{ph} + \alpha\, p_{ref}\mathbf{I}$ for the hard material (left) and soft material (right) at time T = 80 s. Top: first rows of the stress tensors (arrows, not scaled) and their magnitudes (color); bottom: second rows of the stress tensors (arrows) and their magnitudes (color). (For interpretation of the colors in the figure(s), the reader is referred to the web version of this article.)

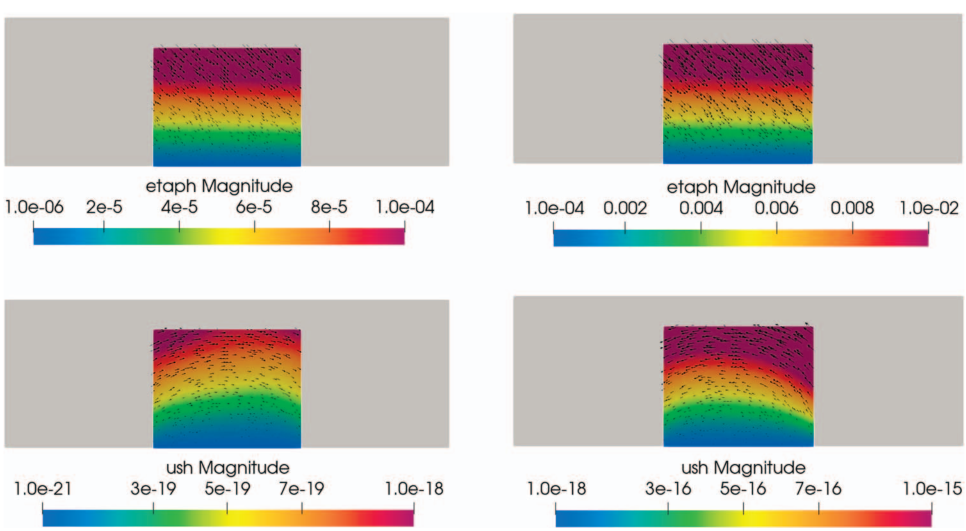


FIG. 9. Computed displacement $\boldsymbol{\eta}_{ph}$ and structure velocity $\mathbf{u}_{sh}$ for the hard material (left) and soft material (right) at time T = 80 s. Top: displacement (arrows) and its magnitude (color); bottom: structure velocity (arrows) and its magnitude (color). (For interpretation of the colors in the figure(s), the reader is referred to the web version of this article.)

7. Conclusions

In this paper, we develop an augmented fully mixed formulation for the quasistatic Navier–Stokes–Biot model and its mixed finite element approximation. The variables are pseudostress–velocity for

Navier–Stokes, velocity–pressure for Darcy flow and stress–displacement–rotation for elasticity. The traces of the structure velocity and the Darcy pressure on the interface are introduced as Lagrange multipliers to impose weakly the interface transmission conditions. In order to obtain control on the fluid pseudostress and velocity in their natural norms, the Navier–Stokes scheme is augmented with redundant Galerkin-type terms arising from the equilibrium and constitutive equations. The scheme exhibits local mass conservation for the Darcy fluid, local momentum conservation for the poroelastic stress, accurate approximations for the Darcy velocity, the poroelastic stress and the fluid pseudostress with continuous normal components across element edges or faces, locking-free behavior and robustness with respect to the physical parameters. We establish well-posedness of the weak formulation and its mixed finite element approximation, employing the semigroup theory for differential equations with monotone operators, combined with a fixed point argument. We further derive error estimates with rates of convergence. The presented numerical results verify the convergence rates and show the performance of the method for modeling blood flow in an arterial bifurcation and air flow through a filter using realistic parameters. The results illustrate the importance of including poroelastic and inertial effects in the model. Furthermore, we observe correct imposition of the interface conditions, accurate stress and velocity computation and oscillation-free solution for parameters in the locking regime for poroelasticity.

Funding

DoD grant MURI ONR N00014-20-1-2595; NSF (DMS 1818775 and DMS 2111129); ANID-Chile through the projects Centro de Modelamiento Matemático (FB210005) and Fondecyt 11220393.

References

Alvarez, M., Gatica, G. N., Gomez-Vargas, B. & Ruiz-Baier, R. (2019) New mixed finite element methods for natural convection with phase-change in porous media. *J. Sci. Comput.*, **80**, 141–174.

Amara, M. & Thomas, J. M. (1979) Equilibrium finite elements for the linear elastic problem. *Numer. Math.*, **33**, 367–383.

Ambartsumyan, I., Ervin, V. J., Nguyen, T. & Yotov, I. (2019a) A nonlinear Stokes–Biot model for the interaction of a non-Newtonian fluid with poroelastic media. *ESAIM Math. Model. Numer. Anal.*, **53**, 1915–1955.

Ambartsumyan, I., Khattatov, E., Nguyen, T. & Yotov, I. (2019b) Flow and transport in fractured poroelastic media. *GEM Int. J. Geomath.*, **10**, 1–34.

Ambartsumyan, I., Khattatov, E., Nordbotten, J. M. & Yotov, I. (2020a) A multipoint stress mixed finite element method for elasticity on simplicial grids. *SIAM J. Numer. Anal.*, **58**, 630–656.

Ambartsumyan, I., Khattatov, E. & Yotov, I. (2020b) A coupled multipoint stress–multipoint flux mixed finite element method for the Biot system of poroelasticity. *Comput. Methods Appl. Mech. Engrg.*, **372**, 113407.

Ambartsumyan, I., Khattatov, E., Yotov, I. & Zunino, P. (2018) A Lagrange multiplier method for a Stokes–Biot fluid–poroelastic structure interaction model. *Numer. Math.*, **140**, 513–553.

Arnold, D. N., Brezzi, F. & Douglas, J. (1984) PEERS: a new mixed finite element for plane elasticity. *Japan J. Appl. Math.*, **1**, 347–367.

Arnold, D. N., Falk, R. S. & Winter, R. (2007) Mixed finite element methods for linear elasticity with weakly imposed symmetry. *Math. Comp.*, **76**, 1699–1724.

Awanou, G. (2013) Rectangular mixed elements for elasticity with weakly imposed symmetry condition. *Adv. Comput. Math.*, **38**, 351–367.

Badia, S., Quaini, A. & Quarteroni, A. (2009) Coupling Biot and Navier–Stokes equations for modelling fluid-poroelastic media interaction. *J. Comput. Phys.*, **228**, 7986–8014.

Biot, M. (1941) General theory of three-dimensional consolidation. *J. Appl. Phys.*, **12**, 155–164.

Bociu, L., Canic, S., Muha, B. & Webster, J. T. (2021) Multilayered poroelasticity interacting with Stokes flow. *SIAM J. Math. Anal.*, **53**, 6243–6279.

Brezzi, F. & Fortin, M. (1991) *Mixed and Hybrid Finite Element Methods*. Springer Series in Computational Mathematics, vol. 15. New York: Springer.

Bukač, M. (2016) A loosely-coupled scheme for the interaction between a fluid, elastic structure and poroelastic material. *J. Comput. Phys.*, **313**, 377–399.

Bukač, M., Yotov, I., Zakerzadeh, R. & Zunino, P. (2015a) Partitioning strategies for the interaction of a fluid with a poroelastic material based on a Nitsche's coupling approach. *Comput. Methods Appl. Mech. Engrg.*, **292**, 138–170.

Bukač, M., Yotov, I. & Zunino, P. (2015b) An operator splitting approach for the interaction between a fluid and a multilayered poroelastic structure. *Numer. Methods Partial Differential Eq.*, **31**, 1054–1100.

Bukač, M., Yotov, I. & Zunino, P. (2017) Dimensional model reduction for flow through fractures in poroelastic media. *ESAIM Math. Model. Numer. Anal.*, **51**, 1429–1471.

Camaño, J., Gatica, G., Oyarzúa, R. & Tierra, G. (2016) An augmented mixed finite element method for the Navier–Stokes equations with variable viscosity. *SIAM J. Numer. Anal.*, **54**, 1069–1092.

Camaño, J., Oyarzúa, R., Ruiz-Baier, R. & Tierra, G. (2018) Error analysis of an augmented mixed method for the Navier–Stokes problem with mixed boundary conditions. *IMA J. Numer. Anal.*, **38**, 1452–1484.

Camaño, J., Oyarzúa, R. & Tierra, G. (2017) Analysis of an augmented mixed-FEM for the Navier–Stokes problem. *Math. Comp.*, **86**, 589–615.

Caucao, S., Gatica, G. N., Oyarzúa, R. & Šebestová, I. (2017) A fully-mixed finite element method for the Navier–Stokes/Darcy coupled problem with nonlinear viscosity. *J. Numer. Math.*, **25**, 55–88.

Caucao, S., Li, T. & Yotov, I. (2020) A cell-centered finite volume method for the Navier–Stokes/Biot model. *Finite Volumes for Complex Applications IX—Methods, Theoretical Aspects, Examples*. Cham: Springer International Publishing, pp. 325–333.

Caucao, S., Li, T. & Yotov, I. (2022) A multipoint stress-flux mixed finite element method for the Stokes–Biot model. *Numer. Math.*, **152**, 411–473.

Cesmelioglu, A. (2017) Analysis of the coupled Navier–Stokes/Biot problem. *J. Math. Anal. Appl.*, **456**, 970–991.

Cesmelioglu, A. & Chidyagwai, P. (2020) Numerical analysis of the coupling of free fluid with a poroelastic material. *Numer. Methods Partial Differential Eq.*, **36**, 463–494.

Cesmelioglu, A., Lee, H., Quaini, A., Wang, K. & Yi, S.-Y. (2016) Optimization-based decoupling algorithms for a fluid-poroelastic system. *Topics in numerical partial differential equations and scientific computing, volume 160 of IMA Vol. Math. Appl.* New York, NY: Springer, pp. 79–98.

Ciarlet, P. (1978) *The Finite Element Method for Elliptic Problems*. Studies in Mathematics and Its Applications, vol. 4. Amsterdam–New York–Oxford: North-Holland Publishing Co.

Cockburn, B., Gopalakrishnan, J. & Guzmán, J. (2010) A new elasticity element made for enforcing weak stress symmetry. *Math. Comp.*, **79**, 1331–1349.

Davis, T. (2004) Algorithm 832: UMFPACK V4.3—an unsymmetric-pattern multifrontal method. *Assoc. Comput. Machin. Trans. Math. Softw.*, **30**, 196–199.

Ervin, V. J., Jenkins, E. W. & Sun, S. (2009) Coupled generalized nonlinear Stokes flow with flow through a porous medium. *SIAM J. Numer. Anal.*, **47**, 929–952.

Galvis, J. & Sarkis, M. (2007) Non-matching mortar discretization analysis for the coupling Stokes–Darcy equations. *Electron. Trans. Numer. Anal.*, **26**, 350–384.

Gatica, G. N. (2014) *A Simple Introduction to the Mixed Finite Element Method. Theory and Applications*. Springer Briefs in Mathematics. Cham: Springer.

Gatica, G. N., Márquez, A., Oyarzúa, R. & Rebolledo, R. (2014) Analysis of an augmented fully-mixed approach for the coupling of quasi-Newtonian fluids and porous media. *Comput. Methods Appl. Mech. Engrg.*, **270**, 76–112.

Gatica, G. N., Oyarzúa, R. & Sayas, F. (2011) Analysis of fully-mixed finite element methods for the Stokes–Darcy coupled problem. *Math. Comp.*, **80**, 1911–1948.

Gatica, G. N., Oyarzúa, R. & Valenzuela, N. (2020) A five-field augmented fully-mixed finite element method for the Navier–Stokes/Darcy coupled problem. *Comput. Math. Appl.*, **80**, 1944–1963.

Hecht, F. (2012) New development in FreeFem++. *J. Numer. Math.*, **20**, 251–265.

Kunwar, H., Lee, H. & Seelman, K. (2020) Second-order time discretization for a coupled quasi-Newtonian fluid-poroelastic system. *Int. J. Numer. Meth. Fluids*, **92**, 687–702.

Lee, J. (2016) Robust error analysis of coupled mixed methods for Biot's consolidation model. *J. Sci. Comput.*, **69**, 610–632.

Li, T. & Yotov, I. (2022) A mixed elasticity formulation for fluid–poroelastic structure interaction. *ESAIM Math. Model. Numer. Anal.*, **56**, 1–40.

Ruiz-Baier, R., Taffetani, M., Westermeyer, H. D. & Yotov, I. (2022) The Biot–Stokes coupling using total pressure: formulation, analysis and application to interfacial flow in the eye. *Comput. Methods Appl. Mech. Engrg.*, **389**, Paper No. 114384, 30.

Schneider, M., Weishaupt, K., Gläser, D., Boon, W. M. & Helmig, R. (2020) Coupling staggered-grid and MPFA finite volume methods for free flow/porous-medium flow problems. *J. Comput. Phys.*, **401**, 109012.

Scott, L. R. & Zhang, S. (1990) Finite element interpolation of nonsmooth functions satisfying boundary conditions. *Math. Comp.*, **54**, 483–493.

Seboldt, A., Oyekole, O., Tambača, J. & Bukač, M. (2021) Numerical modeling of the fluid-porohyperelastic structure interaction. *SIAM J. Sci. Comput.*, **43**, A2923–A2948.

Showalter, R. E. (1997) *Monotone Operators in Banach Space and Nonlinear Partial Differential Equations*. Mathematical Surveys and Monographs, vol. 49. Providence, RI: American Mathematical Society.

Showalter, R. E. (2005) Poroelastic filtration coupled to Stokes flow. *Control Theory of Partial Differential Equations*. Lect. Notes Pure Appl. Math., vol. 242. Boca Raton, FL: Chapman & Hall/CRC, pp. 229–241.

Showalter, R. E. (2010) Nonlinear degenerate evolution equations in mixed formulation. *SIAM J. Math. Anal.*, **42**, 2114–2131.

Stenberg, R. (1988) A family of mixed finite elements for the elasticity problem. *Numer. Math.*, **53**, 513–538.

Wang, X. & Yotov, I. A Lagrange multiplier method for the fully dynamic Navier–Stokes–Biot system. Preprint.

Yi, S.-Y. (2014) Convergence analysis of a new mixed finite element method for Biot's consolidation model. *Numer. Methods Partial Differ. Equ.*, **30**, 1189–1210.

Yi, S.-Y. (2017) A study of two modes of locking in poroelasticity. *SIAM J. Numer. Anal.*, **55**, 1915–1936.